



**THE PHENOMENOLOGICAL STRATEGIES OF  
SUPERNATURALISM PERTAINING TO THE CORRUPTION  
AND DESTRUCTION OF THE HUMAN MIND THROUGH  
POWERS AND MIND CONTROL**

by

**Marilize van der Walt**

Master of Science (Cum Laude)

Master of Theology (Summa Cum Laude)

Diploma of Theology (Bridging course)

Submitted in accordance with the requirements of the degree of

**PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR**

In

**DIVINITY**

at

**ST. CLEMENTS PRIVATE SWISS UNIVERSITY**

PROMOTOR

**Prof Dr CONNIE MJ BRAND** DLitt PhD MTh

November 2013



## DECLARATION OF AUTHENTICITY

I, the undersigned, \_\_\_\_\_,  
declare that this dissertation is my original work, compiled and utilized especially  
to fulfil the purposes and objectives of this study and has not been previously  
submitted to any other University for a higher degree. I certify that all information  
contained herein, in all my application materials submitted by me are true,  
correct and accurate to the best of my knowledge, and believe.

\_\_\_\_\_

Signature

\_\_\_\_\_

Date

\_\_\_\_\_



## DEDICATION

***“He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty. I will say of the LORD, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust.”***

***Psalm 91:1-2(KJV)***

***“ A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee.<sup>11</sup> For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways.<sup>12</sup> They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone.”***

***Psalm 91:7, 11&12 (KJV)***

I dedicate this research to all the mind controlled slaves who are victims of Monarch Mind Control and everyone who has been enslaved by sexual addiction through their minds as a result of pornography addiction or the lies of homosexuality. May you find the freedom that is available through Jesus Christ, the Son of God Whom was sent to set you free.

-----oOo-----



## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The first and foremost thank you goes to our Lord Jesus Christ the Saviour of all mankind who redeemed us from darkness and brought us into His marvellous Kingdom of light.

To my promoter, Professor Dr Connie MJ Brand, thank you for all your ongoing support, guidance, mentorship and kindness.

To my family, mom, dad and sister - thank you for all your love, help and ongoing support without which this project would not have been possible.

To my loving boyfriend, Andre, thank you for all your love, support and understanding during this project.

To the following people, Karel, Pieter and Emlyn, thank you for your contribution in making this project a success.

To Mrs Susan de Lange, thank you for all the effort and time that you have put into every design and illustration for this project.

-----oOo-----





## SUMMARY

### THE PHENOMENOLOGICAL STRATEGIES OF SUPERNATURALISM PERTAINING TO THE CORRUPTION AND DESTRUCTION OF THE HUMAN MIND THROUGH POWERS AND MIND CONTROL

By

**Marilize van der Walt**

**PROMOTOR:** PROF DR CONNIE MJ BRAND (DLitt PhD MTh)  
**DEGREE:** PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR IN DIVINITY  
**INSTITUTION:** ST CLEMENTS PRIVATE SWISS UNIVERSITY

Throughout the history of mankind, Satan, the adversary of God, has set out to deceive, tempt and murder mankind, the prized possessions of God. His murderous feat is in response to him losing his rightful place in heaven as a result of his own sin of pride. Mankind, made in the Image of God, has been given authority to rule and to reign freely, upon the earth. Through the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ on the cross, mankind has been set free from bondage and the kingdom of darkness of which they were a part of. In a jealous rage Satan has been working toward being able to control mankind by manipulation of the mind through ***deception, control and temptation***. Mind control has taken various forms and is aimed to either turn God's prized possessions away from Him, to cunningly lure them into bondage through deception and thereby keeping them in sin separated from God, or to get mankind to worship the counterfeit, Satan as their God. Through mind control and mind programming Satan has, through his earthly agents, managed to entrap precious children of God in a bondage so deep that only God through His Holy Spirit are able to lead to freedom.



Mind control will be used by the World's elite power structures in the End Times to indoctrinate and influence even God's elect. Not all mind control is overt and the Bible warns that mankind is to "gird up the loins" of their minds and to "guard their hearts" in order to ensure that they escape the cunning snare prepared for them by the enemy. It is only through the truth of God's precious Word and by the leading of His Holy Spirit that one will escape the snares of the evil one.

-----oOo-----



## TABLE OF CONTENTS (Abbreviated)

TITLE PAGE.....	i)
DECLARATION OF AUTHENTICITY.....	iii)
DEDICATION.....	v)
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS.....	vii)
SUMMARY.....	ix)
TABLE OF CONTENTS (Abbreviated).....	xiii)
TABLE OF CONTENTS.....	xv)
 <b>PROLEGOMENA</b> .....	 1
 <b>CHAPTER 1:</b> A MENTAL MODEL OF SEXUAL ADDICTION PERTAINING TO PORNOGRAPHY IN EXPLAINING THE BEHAVIOURS OF A PORNOGRAPHY ADDICT.....	   19
 <b>CHAPTER 2:</b> THE SEPARATION AND DESTRUCTION OF GOD’S CHILDREN THROUGH THE ONSLAUGHT ON GENDER AND SEXUALITY THROUGH THE MIND .....	   116
 <b>CHAPTER 3:</b> MIND PROGRAMMING AND MIND CONTROL AS A WEAPON AGAINST THE HUMAN RACE IN GAINING CONTROL.....	   193
 <b>CHAPTER 4:</b> SUBLIMINAL MIND CONTROL AND THE PREPARATION OF THE EARTH FOR THE COMING NEW WORLD ORDER .....	   274
 <b>CONCLUSION</b> .....	 354
BIBLIOGRAPHY.....	363
TERMS, DEFINITIONS AND ABBREVIATIONS.....	377
FIGURES AND TABLES .....	389
CERTIFICATE OF EDITING.....	



PROLEGOMENA.....	1
<b>CHAPTER 1 A MENTAL MODEL OF SEXUAL ADDICTION PERTAINING TO PORNOGRAPHY IN EXPLAINING THE BEHAVIOURS OF A PORNOGRAPHY ADDICT.....</b>	<b>19</b>
1 INTRODUCTION.....	19
2 MENTAL MODELS.....	23
3 PORNOGRAPHY AS AN ADDICTION: INSIGHT INTO THE MENTAL MODEL OF SEXUAL ADDICTIONS AND BEHAVIOURS.....	27
3.1 How Does Pornography Alter The Brain?.....	30
3.2 Process/Stage: The Narrowing Process.....	34
3.2.1 Healthy Marriage.....	34
3.2.2 Pornographic Experience.....	34
3.3 The Release of Natural Chemicals.....	35
3.3.1 Healthy Marriage.....	35
3.3.1.1 Dopamine.....	35
3.3.1.2 Norepinephrine.....	35
3.3.1.3 Testosterone.....	36
3.3.1.4 Oxytocin.....	36
3.3.1.5 Serotonin.....	37
3.3.1.6 The experience is not more than physical.....	37
3.3.1.7 A climax of many things.....	37
3.3.1.8 Better for the experience.....	38
3.3.2 Pornographic Experience.....	38
3.3.2.1 Dopamine.....	38
3.3.2.2 Norepinephrine.....	39
3.3.2.3 Testosterone.....	40
3.3.2.4 Oxytocin.....	40
3.3.2.5 Serotonin.....	41
3.3.2.6 The experience is more than just sexual.....	41
3.3.2.7 An empty hollow climax.....	45
3.3.2.8 When reality returns.....	46
4 MENTAL MODELS IN PORNOGRAPHY AND THE SEXUAL ADDICTION CYCLE.....	49

4.1	The Pornographic Industry.....	51
5	THE FOLLOWING RELEVANT STATISTICS ARE PROVIDED BY 2013 ANNUAL REPORT ON THE COVENANT EYES WEBSITE.....	52
5.1	The Porn Industry.....	52
5.2	Subscriptions.....	53
5.3	Porn in the Church.....	53
5.4	Porn and Teenagers.....	53
5.5	Porn and Young Adults.....	54
5.6	Porn and the Marriage.....	55
6	PORNOGRAPHERS TARGET MEN AND WOMEN DIFFERENTLY.....	58
7	CORE BELIEFS AND THE OUTCOMES IN SEXUAL ADDICTION.....	61
7.1	Core beliefs of an addict.....	63
8	THE FAMILY AND MENTAL MODELS.....	68
9	THE SEXUAL ADDICTION CYCLE.....	69
9.1	Preoccupation.....	69
9.2	Ritualization.....	70
9.3	Compulsive Sexual Belvoir.....	70
9.4	Despair.....	70
10	THE ROLE OF ABUSE AND BLOODLINES.....	81
11	CO-ADDICTION.....	82
12	CYBERSEX.....	86
13	CHILD PORNOGRAPHY.....	91
14	SEXUALIZED MEDIA.....	95
15	RESOLUTION OF SEXUAL ADDICTION.....	95
16	THE SPIRITUAL SIDE TO PORNOGRAPHY.....	102
17	CONCLUSION.....	103
	APPENDIX A.....	106
	APPENDIX B.....	111

<b>CHAPTER 2</b>	<b>THE SEPARATION AND DESTRUCTION OF GOD’S CHILDREN THROUGH THE ONSLAUGHT ON GENDER AND SEXUALITY THROUGH THE MIND.....</b>	<b>116</b>
1	INTRODUCTION.....	116
2	A BIBLICAL PERSPECTIVE ON HOMOSEXUALITY.....	118
3	HOMOSEXUALITY AS VIEWED FROM A SCIENCE, NATURE AND NUTURE PERSPECTIVE.....	124
4	HOMOSEXUALITY AS A LIFESTYLE.....	136
5	THE ROLE OF ABUSE IN HOMOSEXUALITY.....	143
6	GENDER IDENTITY DISORDER.....	148
7	PARENT CHILDHOOD RELATIONSHIPS IN HOMOSEXUALITY.....	156
8	HOMOSEXUALITY AND AIDS/HIV.....	169
9	HOMOSEXUALITY AND SPIRITUAL INFLUENCES.....	170
10	RESOLVING HOMOSEXUALITY FROM A BIBLICAL PERSPECTIVE.....	172
11	CONCLUSION.....	190

<b>CHAPTER 3</b>	<b>MIND PROGRAMMING AND MIND CONTROL AS A WEAPON AGAINST THE HUMAN RACE IN GAINING CONTROL.....</b>	<b>193</b>
1	INTRODUCTION.....	193
2	THE MIND/BRAIN CONNECTION.....	196
3	WHAT IS MIND CONTROL?.....	199
4	SUBLIMINAL MIND CONTROL.....	200
5	MIND CONTROL.....	209
6	SATAN'S ATTACK ON THE MIND THROUGH CREATING DID.....	210
6.1	Dissociative Identity Disorder.....	211
6.2	How Abnormal Dissociation Occurs.....	216
6.3	The Hegelian Dialectic.....	219
6.4	Types of Presenting Systems.....	223
6.4.1	Core Identity.....	223
6.4.2	Host Identity.....	224
6.4.3	Primary identity.....	224
6.4.4	Presenters.....	224
6.4.5	Function alters.....	224
6.4.6	Victim.....	224
6.4.7	Protectors.....	224
6.4.8	Controllers.....	224
6.4.9	Persecutors.....	225
6.4.10	Reporter.....	225
6.4.11	Inner Self Helper.....	225
6.4.12	Caretaker.....	225
6.4.13	Fragment.....	225
6.4.14	Shell.....	225
6.5	Types of Presenting Systems.....	226
6.6	Internal Organization of Identities.....	227
6.7	Trauma in the Use of Creating DID.....	230
7	MIND CONTROL/MIND PROGRAMMING.....	231
7.1	Creating a Split in the Mind Dividing the Spirit.....	232
7.2	Dividing the Spirit.....	233
7.3	How does Mind Programming Work.....	235
7.3.1	A History on Mind Control.....	238
7.3.2	The Basics of Mind Programming.....	246
7.3.2.1	A-Alpha programming.....	250
7.3.2.2	B-Beta (Sexual).....	250
7.3.2.3	C-Chi (Return to cult).....	250
7.3.2.4	D-Delta (Assassination).....	251
7.3.2.5	E-Epsilon (Animal Alters).....	251
7.3.2.6	F-Omega (Internal computers).....	251
7.3.2.7	G-Gamma (Demonology).....	251
7.3.2.8	H-Hypnotic Inductions.....	251
7.3.2.9	I—Janus-Alex call backs (End Times).....	251
7.3.2.10	J-Theta (Psychic warfare).....	252
7.3.2.11	K-Tinkerbelle (Never grow up/Alien).....	252
7.3.2.12	L-Twinning (Teams).....	252



7.3.2.13	M-Solemetric Military.....	252
7.3.2.14	N-Songs (Reminders).....	252
7.3.2.15	O-Zeta (Snuff films).....	252
7.3.2.16	P-Sample alter system codes.....	252
7.3.2.17	Q-Catholic programming.....	252
7.3.2.18	R-MENSA programming.....	252
7.3.2.19	S-Hand Signals.....	252
7.3.2.20	T-Programming site codes (used for slave model codes etc.).....	252
8	THE CREATION OF BODY PROGRAMS.....	258
9	THE USE OF DEMONS IN MIND CONTROL PROGRAMMING.....	263
9.1	Principalities.....	263
9.2	Powers and Rulers.....	264
9.3	Demons.....	265
9.4	The Issue of Legal Right.....	265
10	GROUPS THAT ARE ENFORCING MIND CONTROL.....	269
11	THE REASON FOR MONARCH PROGRAMMING.....	269
11.1	The Spirit behind mind control.....	270
12	SOLUTION.....	270
13	CONCLUSION.....	272
<b>CHAPTER 4</b>	<b>END TIME DESTRUCTION OF HUMAN KIND IN ESTABLISHING A NEW WORLD ORDER BY CONTROLLING THE MASSES THROUGH MIND CONTROL.....</b>	<b>274</b>
1	INTRODUCTION.....	274
2	HITLER: THE DOMINATION OF A NATION THROUGH ONE MAN.....	278
2.1	The Science of Mind Controlling a Nation.....	279
3	THE NEW AGE MOVEMENT: A NEW WORLD RELIGION?.....	290
3.1	Exopolitics.....	300
4	TRANSHUMANISM.....	306
5	WHITCHCRAFT: WORSHIPPING THE EARTH MOTHER GODDESS.....	310
6	THE ILLUMINATI AND SECRET SOCIETIES AS AGENTS BEHIND GLOBAL WORLD DOMINATION.....	313
7	THE ATTACH ON THE MIND THROUGH TECHNOLOGIES.....	324
7.1	Electromagnetic Fields Implants and Combinational Approaches.....	328
8	STRONGHOLDS IN THE MIND OF THE BELIEVER.....	335
8.1	Examples of Strongholds in the Mind.....	339
8.1.1	The Stronghold of Fear.....	339
8.1.2	The Stronghold of Cold Love.....	340
9	CONCLUSION.....	341
	APPENDIX A.....	344



## *Phenomenological Strategies Of Supernaturalism Pertaining to the Corruption And Destruction Of The Human Mind Through Powers And Mind Control*

---

Mankind was created in the Image of God (according to Genesis 1:27) and the Bible describes the human being as a triune being consisting of a spirit, a soul and a body (according to 1 Thessalonians 5:23). In his book, *The Spiritual man*, Watchman Nee explains how the spirit part of the human being is responsible for communication with God, the conscience and intuition. The soul is where the mind, will and emotions or the “psychological” and consciousness of “self” resides. The body is the physical part of the human being where the five senses (touch, smell, vision, taste and hearing) i.e. the physiological part of the human being resides<sup>1</sup>.

Satan, the adversary of God, has since the beginning of time hated God and hated His creation with all of his being. Satan was banished from heaven, where he was one of the Archangels serving God, for wanting to become God himself.

---

<sup>1</sup> Nee Watchman. *The Spiritual Man*. (1968). USA: Christian Publishers inc.

---

His pride cost him his place in heaven from which he was thrown (according to Jeremiah 14, Ezekiel 28). Since the Garden of Eden Satan has launched his fiery attacks on mankind, trying to destroy God's prized possessions to get back at God. Satan's attack on humankind is not only on a physical level that can be perceived with the natural senses, but especially on the souls as well as spirits of mankind.

One of the main areas of attack for the adversary of God is the ***mind of mankind***. This is because of the importance of the mind, as the Bible states:

***"For as he thinks in his heart, so is he."***

***Proverbs 23:7***

Therefore, whoever has control of the mind, controls the man. This Biblical truth is unfortunately used against mankind who are many times ignorant of the importance of their minds. The Bible states that God will hold mankind responsible for their thought life and that they are to take every thought captive unto obedience of Jesus Christ:

***"and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;"***

***2 Corinthians 10:5***

The result of not taking every thought captive unto obedience in Jesus Christ leaves mankind open to the sinister workings of the adversary to control and manipulate one through ones' ***own*** thought life. This leads to a myriad of problems not only for an individual but also affects everything he/she does as well as every relationship they are ever in. Therefore the Bible warns:

***"Above all else, guard your heart, for everything you do flows from it."***

***Proverbs 4:23 (NIV)***

The importance of ones' mind is accentuated yet again in this Scripture verse. Once again one can see that **everything** that man does flows from what goes on in his mind (heart). Thoughts and reasonings that are not in line with the Word of God (that are not "taken captive unto obedience of Christ") has the power to destroy a human being as it triggers a myriad of physiological changes within the physical body. The Bible says the **Word of God is life**:

***"It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life."***

***John 6:63***

And therefore renewing ones' mind to the Word of God will be a source of life and light in ones life. The mind is one of the most powerful mechanisms ever created by the hands of God. Physically the mind consists of the brain where literally trillions<sup>2</sup> of neural networks are interlinked firing millions of messages throughout the network of neuronal cells at any given time. The mind/body connection has fascinated scientists for decades and all of its inner connections and functional mechanisms still remain a mystery to science. The thoughts/actions of the flesh (carnal mind) leads to death:

***"For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace."***

***Romans 8:6-11***

To be carnally minded means to not renew one's mind to the Word of God and to not let the Spirit of God rule one's thoughts and actions. One of the most sought after answers in studying the mind in various sciences, is the relation of the mind to the physical brain, that is often referred to as the "**mind/body problem**<sup>3</sup>".

---

<sup>2</sup> <http://discovermagazine.com/2011/mar/10-numbers-the-nervous-system#.UeqMJ01HI1Q>

<sup>3</sup> <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mind>

The Bible states that God created mankind with a **sound mind**:

***“For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.”***

***2 Timothy 1:7***

The amplified version phrases it as follows:

***“For God did not give us a spirit of timidity (of cowardice, of craven and cringing and fawning fear), but [He has given us a spirit] of power and of love and of calm and well-balanced mind and discipline and self-control.”***

***1 Timothy 1:7***

God thus created mankind to have a mind that is settled, restful and at peace with its surroundings. The Bible is very specific about the condition of the mind. It states that after one has been saved the children of God has the **mind of Christ**:

***“But we have the mind of Christ (the Messiah) and do hold the thoughts (feelings and purposes) of His heart.”***

***1 Corinthians 2:16***

The mind of Christ is having a mind according to the will and purposes of His heart and His Word (as Jesus Christ **is** the Word of God, according to John 1:1). It is thus clear from the Bible that mankind was not created to have a mind that is fearful, restless, unsettled or cowardly. Yet today, this is not what is seen among mankind. Fear, rage, hatred and everything resulting from not having the mind of Christ are rampant today.

Having trouble with the “mind” is an age old problem that mankind has been facing since the beginning of time when Satan launched the assault on Eve’s mind and led her into temptation in the Garden of Eden. By perverting and twisting the truth of God, Satan was able to deceive Eve into **changing her mind** about God and what God said (according to Genesis 3).

Not having the mind of Christ and not taking every thought captive unto obedience of Christ, not only results in the chaos of hate and rage residing in the human race but the attack goes further.

In the modern day, the assault on the Image of God has not stopped, but rears its ugly head in the form of **mind control** driven by Satan's never ceasing urge and desire for **power and control**. Mind control may take several forms and Satan knows each one of them like the back of his hand. He uses each weapon of mind control in his arsenal against human kind in order to bring them out of under the coverage of God's protection by tempting them to sin or by deceiving them and thereby forming strongholds in their minds.

One of the ways in which Satan tries to gain control of human kind is through **subliminal mind control**. The word subliminal (meaning "below threshold"<sup>4</sup>) is the projection of messages into the mind that are only perceived by the subconscious. In this way, subliminal messages could be used to "plant ideas" into the minds of minds of the human race without them even being aware. Subliminal mind control has been used throughout modern day society and has managed, as the word meaning suggest, to somehow stay "**under the radar**" while influencing millions of people throughout the world.

Subliminal messages are programmed into advertisements, films, radio messages and all other forms of media. The idea behind the control, to influence society to accept an idea or conform to a norm, is most of the time not even realized by the public.

In this way control is exerted on an unknowing human race by the dark and sinister forces that work behind the scenes to gain control.

---

<sup>4</sup> Subliminal stimuli. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Subliminal\\_stimuli](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Subliminal_stimuli)).

Mind control can take various forms, from the subliminal messages used to infiltrate society through mass media productions to deliberate mind control through the use of **satanic ritual abuse (SRA)** where mind control is deliberately and specifically used in a particular way to gain control of the victim.

During SRA mind control is taken to its extreme form and through specific means and methods the mind is reconstructed in such a way that the victim is under complete control of their “handlers”.

In this way Satan and his co-workers (humans many times under his control) can program their “victims” to perform certain tasks (usually sinister in nature) at certain give “cues” or “triggers” that are built into their “system” during the programming of the mind. In this way **total control** is achieved over an individual who is many times unaware of what is really happening to them or what they are doing while under the control of their programmers.

**Monarch programming** is a method of mind control used by organizations for covert purposes. During programming a victim is traumatized in order to access and gain control over the mind so that a **“mind controlled slave”** is created who can be triggered to perform any action by the programmer. It uses a combination of **psychology, neuroscience and occultic rituals** to create alter personalities within a victim (from here the term Multiple Personality Disorder or MPD) that can be controlled to carry out any task they are “programmed” for. These victims can be used for military purposes, sex slavery or for the entertainment industry.

As can be seen abuse is used as a means to gain control over someone’s mind. Mankind was created for love and acceptance not for fear, rejection and abuse (in any of its forms) which has the ability to corrupt and destroy the mind.

Abuse has been well known to cause a myriad of psychological disturbances in the mind over and above the severe physical damage the individual is exposed to. Merriam Webster defines abuse as follows<sup>5</sup>:

- 1: a corrupt practice or custom**
- 2: improper or excessive use or treatment : MISUSE <drug abuse>**
- 3: obsolete : a deceitful act : DECEPTION**
- 4: language that condemns or vilifies usually unjustly, intemperately, and angrily**
- 5: physical maltreatment**

Abuse is used by Satan in many ways to corrupt the mind in order to gain control or to turn a person away from God, His true Creator. Abuse may cause changes in ones' brain patterns<sup>6,7,8,9</sup> that are responsible for several disorders only coming to the fore later in such an individuals' life. The effect of fear and intimidation brought on by abuse in creating a perversion in the mind will be premise of investigation in this study.

When God created mankind he created them male and female:

***“So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.”***

***Genesis 1:27***

In modern times (and throughout history) Satan has perverted the minds of human beings into believing that they were not meant to be the gender that they are or that they want to be the other sex. Since God did not create mankind this way it speaks of some kind of perversion that must have taken place in the mind.

---

<sup>5</sup> Abuse. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/abuse>).

<sup>6</sup> Change in brain structure after childhood abuse. (<http://med.miami.edu/news/changes-in-brain-structure-found-after-childhood-abuse/>).

<sup>7</sup> Neurology of abuse. (<http://www.wired.com/wiredscience/2011/12/neurology-of-abuse/>).

<sup>8</sup> Child abuse. (<http://www.livescience.com/18453-child-abuse-brain.html>)

<sup>9</sup> Sexual and emotional abuse. (<http://healthland.time.com/2013/06/05/sexual-and-emotional-abuse-scar-the-brain-in-specific-ways/>).

---



This is reiterated by the fact that God strongly judges homosexuality in the Bible:

***“Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived. Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homosexuals, nor sodomites, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners will inherit the kingdom of God.”***

***1 Corinthians 6:9-10***

The Bible states that people practising homosexuality will not be part of the kingdom of God. Satan has perverted the minds of gay/lesbians into believing that they “are what they are”. This thesis will investigate the perversion of the mind as it prevails in gay/lesbian individuals.

In a similar vein, mankind is attacked on his sexuality through the mind and as a result of false beliefs about oneself mankind is lured into the trap of sexual addiction through the viewing of pornography. It is only through the working of the Holy Spirit that one is able to break free from such a strong bondage as the one formed in sexual addiction as it pertains to pornography. Mankind is, through pornography addiction, a slave to his own mind as this results in a chemical addiction of the brain.

The Bible states that the truth will set one free – this freedom can only be obtained from the Word of God, Jesus Himself (according to John 1:1). Having the mind of Christ speaks of having Christlike thoughts that are based solemnly on the ***Word of God***, without which no man can be set free:

***“And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.”***

***John 8:32***

The Bible instructs to “renew” the mind to conform to the Word of God:

***“And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;”***

***Ephesians 4:23***

***“And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.”***

***Romans 12:2***

Through letting the Word of God seep deep into ones' mind and soul the truth will set one free, break the strongholds that were formed by wrong patterns formed in the mind were Satan wanted to get a foothold into ones' life.

This thesis deems to explore the ways in which Satan attacks the minds of human kind in order to gain control over them. This can occur at varying levels from captivity as a result of sexual addiction to the full-blown mind control programming of the mind in which mind controlled slaves are under the complete control of Satan and where he and his demons have direct access to the mind and life of these slaves.

It is also through mind control that Satan plans to fulfil his End Time schemes of establishing a One World Order upon the earth. He has all of his devices in place for achieving the age old goal of becoming the ruler of the earth with the human race under his control. The idea is to have a human race that is compliant to his reign and to all that he proposes to do.

The indoctrination of the Illuminati goals into the minds of the human race is a well thought out process that prepares mankind for accepting his reign.

## **1. PROBLEM STATEMENT**

Satan has been launching an attack on the mind of human kind throughout the ages. He has used different weapons and means of intimidation, fear and manipulation to obtain control over the mind of individuals.

The mind is corrupted, perverted and twisted so that mankind becomes a footstool that can be used for the purposes of Satan and the sinister forces of darkness to gain control of mankind upon the earth.

This thesis will describe various ways the mind is attacked, influenced, perverted, corrupted and controlled by Satan and the powers of supernaturalism. The thesis will also provide the only solution for individuals to become truly free from oppression and control inflicted by the enemy by using the Bible and Holy Spirit as basis for the means to obtain freedom.

## **2. PURPOSE AND SIGNIFICANCE (AIM) OF RESEARCH**

### **PURPOSE**

The purpose of the study is to:

- To explore the problem of subliminal mind control in modern day culture and the secret agenda behind it
- To expose the problem of abuse (fear and intimidation) in creating pathology in the mind
- To explore the influence of satanic forces on the mind
- To expose the hidden agenda of Satan in using reasoning to turn God's people away from Him
- To provide a Biblical solution as the answer to mind control and brain pathology caused by abuse and other means

### **AIMS**

The specific aims of this proposed dissertation are to:

1. To expose the sinister schemes of subliminal mind control in modern day culture
2. Shed light on the hidden agenda behind mind control
3. To investigate the influences of satanic forces on the mind

4. To explore the effects of disturbances of the mind in gender disorders (gay/homosexual)
5. To explore the effects of trauma on the mind
6. Provide a background on the effects of abuse on the mind
7. To give insight into the field of SRA
8. To address the spiritual effects of SRA
9. To explain how programming of the mind works during SRA
10. To shed light on new cultural phenomena like “mentalists”
11. To explore the effects of abuse in creating DID
12. To explore how strongholds are created in the mind and the Biblical solution thereof
13. To provide a solution for protecting oneself from subliminal mind control through the Word of God
14. To explore mind control in witchcraft
15. To explore the effects of pornography and the pathological effects thereof on the brain
16. To explore case studies regarding mind control and where perversion of the mind took place as a result of abuse
17. To provide a Biblical solution to mind control and the effects thereof
18. To provide a Biblical solution to breaking strongholds in the mind created by abuse
19. To provide guidance on how to be led by the Spirit and let the spirit man be in control of the process of healing for abused victims

### **3. OBJECTIVES AND RESEARCH QUESTIONS**

The Objective of this Proposed Dissertation is to answer the following questions:

1. What pathology is created physically in the brain during abuse, fear and intimidation as opposed to the “normal” brain?

2. What are the physical and psychological symptoms brought on by fear, intimidation and manipulation as a result of abuse?
3. How is the mind programmed during SRA?
4. How is subliminal mind control achieved through the media?
5. How does hypnosis work and how is it applied as part of a more sinister scheme to suppress memory or instill ideas into the mind?
6. How does satanic forces influence the mind?
7. How is schizophrenia related to abuse and mind control?
8. How is MPD created during SRA?
9. How are strong holds formed in the mind?
10. What is the Biblical solution for dealing with strong holds in the mind?
11. How does trauma create pathology in the brain?
12. How does the mind get perverted to result in gay/lesbianism?
13. What effect does sexual addiction (pornography) have on the mind?
14. How are victims of pornography freed?
15. How is deception used as a tool in mind control?
16. How is the mind renewed and restored to the way that God intended for it to be?
17. How effective is psychotherapy?
18. Is psychotherapy based on observable, verifiable fact or on subjective theories, interpretations or observations?
19. On what ideologies are the various psychotherapeutic systems founded?
20. To what extend is psychotherapy medicine, philosophy, or religion?
21. Are Christianity and psychotherapy compatible?
22. On what principles are Biblical counseling based and can these be used to reconcile and minister to troubled souls i.e. minds?
23. Does the Bible only contain preventative principles for ones' mental-emotional well-being or is there restorative power in these principles as well?
24. What is the mind/body connection and how are they interrelated?
25. What does SRA entail?

26. What happens in the mind during a traumatic event?
27. What doorways are opened in the mind during abuse?
28. What are the Biblical principles for dealing with SRA?
29. Are Christians susceptible to mind control?
30. How does one safeguard oneself from mind control and the effects thereof?
31. How is mind control used in modern day society?
32. How are strongholds broken over an individuals' life pertaining to the forces of evil that work in on the mind?
33. How will Satan use mind control in the End times to attain his goal of becoming the ruler of the world worshipped by the human race?

#### **4. THESIS AND HYPOTHESES AND RESEARCH STATEMENT**

##### **Hypothesis 1:**

Mind control is gained through satanic ritual abuse.

##### **Hypothesis 2:**

Subliminal mind control is used to as a tool in Satan's hand to gain control over modern day society through the media.

##### **Hypothesis 3:**

The Word of God and the working of the Holy Spirit are the only true weapons and means of restoration against the onslaught of mind perversion by the enemy.

## Research Statement

Satan assaults the mind of believers and non-believers in various ways in order to gain control over the human race for his own purposes and to turn them away from their One True Creator, God.

## 5. DEMARCATION OF THE FIELD OF STUDY

The primary purpose of this proposed thesis is to describe and explain the effects of fear, trauma and abuse in the creation of pathology in the mind and how it is used by Satan to gain control of the mind through various means. The Biblical solution for trauma and perversion of the mind will also be given.

The purpose of this thesis is **not** to discredit or nullify psychotherapeutic ways but rather to contrast and compare its way to that of the Bible and Biblical counseling.

The thesis does however hold that the Bible is a complete, sufficient foundation for mental emotional health and provides a source of healing for all non-clinically based mental disorders. The idea that all non-clinically based mental emotional disorders have a spiritual, Christ centered solution rather than a psychological, self-centered solution is also explored in this thesis.

## 6. LITERATURE REVIEW

In constructing this research project, executing the research and analyzing the data, a broad and deep body of literature was considered. This literature crosses disciplines, including Theology, psychology, physiology, sociology, psychiatry, and history.

While an exhaustive account of all the relevant literature in these disciplines would be a dissertation-size undertaking in and of itself, it is instructive to examine only some of the key texts, theories and concepts which inform and underpin this research. Such an examination also helps put this project in a larger scholarly and Ethnographic context.

## **7. THESIS WRITING METHODOLOGY AND APPROACH**

A combination of diverse qualitative designed methodology types is intended to be used as Historical analysis, Ethnography and Phenomenology approaches.

The academic report is audience oriented:

- It will demonstrate an in-depth understanding of the topic
- Answers reader's important questions about the topic
- Defines the terms and concepts the readers need to know
- Uses language the reader will understand
- Uses persuasion, not undocumented assertions, to argue the topic
- The report will use peer reviewed publications or other reliable, credible, sources to support ideas

The study will include:

- Data collection and literature review obtained from books, magazine articles and internet information, dictionaries, Master – and Doctor Theses.

The approaches will be as follows:

- Scientific knowledge will be gained through observation and studies.



## 8. PROPOSED TIMEFRAME

<b>Deliverables</b>	<b>Due Date</b>
<b>Literature review</b>	January - June 2013
<b>Proposal</b>	June 2013
<b>Chapter 1</b>	July 2013
<b>Chapter 2</b>	August 2013
<b>Chapter 3</b>	September 2013
<b>Chapter 4</b>	October 2013
<b>Conclusion</b>	November 2013
<b>Dissertation due</b>	November 2013

## 9. PROPOSED TABLE OF CONTENTS AND DIVISION OF CHAPTERS

**Dedication**

**Acknowledgements**

**Summary**

**Prolegomena**

### **Chapter 1**

**A mental model of sexual addiction pertaining to pornography in explaining the behaviours of a pornography addict**

This chapter will provide an overview of the main mental models that are present in the minds of pornography addicts. It explores how these mental models influences and drive the behaviour of the sexual addict as well as explains the bondages that are formed as a result of a sexual addiction.

## **Chapter 2**

### **The separation and destruction of God's children through the onslaught on gender and sexuality through the mind**

This chapter explores how Satan attacks the gender of mankind through the mind in creating childhood trauma or disruption of family bonds so that in the mind of the homosexual a perversion about a perception about themselves takes place.

## **Chapter 3**

### **Mind programming and mind control as weapon against the human race in gaining control**

The chapter will set out to provide an in depth study of the functioning of the mind during mind control and mind programming. The role and effect of abuse and trauma in creating pathology in the mind will be discussed with specific reference to SRA and the creation of dissociative identity disorder (DID). The chapter will further aim to explain the monarch mind control methods with specific reference to subliminal mind control.

Subliminal mind control of the masses as part of a hidden satanic agenda will be revealed as part of this chapter. The final discussion will deal with cultural phenomena like mentalism, hypnosis, telekinesis, mental magic, hybridization and the use of telepathy in mind control.

## **Chapter 4**

### **End Time Destruction of Humankind In establishing a New World Order by controlling the masses through mind control**

The final chapter will explore how through controlling the minds of a nation, Hitler established his reign during the First and Second World War. The chapter will further endeavour to explore the applications of this type of mind control into modern day society.

The main goals of the New Age Movement, the Illuminati, Witchcraft and Transhumanism are exposed and compared to how they are applied according to the principles of Hitler in controlling the minds of a nation.

The chapter also gives an insight into the technologies that are available to control the minds of the masses as tools in the hands of the governing elite as part of Satan's End Time scheme to become the ruler of the world to a compliant human race.

## **Conclusion**

## **List of figures**

## **Terms and Definitions**

## **Addendum**

## **Bibliography**

## **10. CONCLUSION**

This study will reveal the schemes of Satan in attacking the minds of the human race. It will give a better understanding into the mental models that are created during pornography addiction as well as reveal the mental bondages formed in homosexuality. This study will reveal the truth about mind control, specifically subliminal mind control, in modern society. It will expose the hidden agenda behind Satan's end time schemes as an onslaught on the image of God, mankind.

## **11. DECLARATION**

This proposed thesis does not contain work previously published by the author, nor work under consideration for publication. The proposed dissertation is completely the result of my own work.

Signature: \_\_\_\_\_



## *A mental model of sexual addiction pertaining to pornography in explaining the behaviours of a pornography addict*

---

### 1. INTRODUCTION

Human sexuality is one of the most powerful and precious gifts given to mankind by the Creator of Life, God. The “sex drive” is one of the most powerful innate basic instincts that exists in a human being and was created by God for the soul purpose of **intimacy between husband and wife** in a loving marriage relationship.

Sexual intimacy is the epitome of “oneness” and celebrates the life as a whole that a married couple shares. It celebrates the **unity** of two lives becoming one flesh:

***“Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.”***

**Genesis 2:24**

The bond that forms between husband and wife is one of the most powerful, strongest bonds that can exist between two human beings.

As this verse suggests, the husband will leave his parents and become one flesh with his wife: the physical tie with ones' wife is even stronger than the bond of parents to their children<sup>1</sup>. When one has to choose between honouring ones parents or spouse, it is clear that ones' spouse receives higher authority<sup>2</sup>.

Sexual intimacy is the culmination of everything that a married couple shares, the mundane everyday tasks, raising children and also the act of sex itself, it is not merely the act in itself that contributes to this special, powerful bond. Through sexual intimacy God blessed man with the gift of procreating life with Him<sup>3</sup>. God blessed man in the Garden of Eden and commanded them to be fruitful and populate the earth:

***“And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.”***

***Genesis 1:28***

This sexual union results in the procreation of life, children – a blessing of God. God created mankind's sexuality with great care and love with the ultimate intimacy in mind, a bond so powerful in “oneness” that the Bible refers to it as “one flesh” indicating the significance of such a bond. This of course, was given to mankind as God made Eve as a helpmeet for Adam as He said that it was not good for man to be alone:

***“And the LORD God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him.”***

***Genesis 2:18***

---

<sup>1</sup> Malan Christina (2010) *The Perversion of Mankind through Sexual Brokenness and Deviation With Special Reference To Homosexuality, Destroying God's Purpose For Godly Bloodlines*. Pretoria: Radah Ministries, p 26.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. p. 27.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. p. 25.

This verse speaks of intimacy, God's plan for mankind is not to live in isolation from other human beings. This however is the reason why Satan, the adversary of God, specifically targets just this: the intimacy between husband and wife as well as the God given purpose of mankind's sexual nature as will become apparent throughout this chapter.

Satan, the enemy of humankind, has since the beginning of time tried to rob the human race of what is rightfully theirs as was given to them by a Loving God. The Bible warns that he sets out to steal, kill and destroy that which God has made sacred:

***"The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly."***

***John 10:10***

Satan hates mankind out of his jealous rage for their position in the Kingdom of God, of which he was previously a part of. Satan was thrown out of heaven for his sin of pride and rebellion against God<sup>4</sup>. Since that very day, Satan and his entourage have waged war against the Saints of God but were defeated in their feat the day that God sent His Son Jesus Christ to die on the Cross for the sins of mankind. At the cross Jesus Christ defeated ***sin itself*** and rose from the dead to redeem mankind and reunite them to a Loving God. It is in this wonderful truth that the power of freedom lies for each and every human being that accepts Him as the Personal Lord and Saviour and walks the road of sanctification. It was for this reason that Jesus Christ came to the earth: to ***set the captives free***<sup>5</sup>.

The sexuality of mankind is one of their most basic fundamental life processes, very powerful in its existence and by targeting exactly that, Satan not only gains control of the human being but also places them in severe bondage.

---

<sup>4</sup> According to Isaiah 14, Ezekiel 28

<sup>5</sup> Isaiah 61:1

It is for this reason that sexual deviations - whether same sex, extramarital relations or any other kind of sexual deviant relation, such as bestiality - that is, sexual relations other than that which God intended for it to be (marriage between husband and wife) is very dangerous for the human race<sup>6</sup>. Satan, of course knows this, and it is for this reason that he intensifies his strongholds and battle plan in the **minds** of the human race pertaining to sexuality in order to bring them to a fall. Sexual addiction, or any other addiction for that matter, has to do with the mind and **core belief systems** that are established in the mind, many times at a very young age.

Sexual bondage is one of the strongest ways that Satan can bind and control mankind as it not only involves a physical act but the whole of the human being – his spirit, soul and body<sup>7</sup>. It not only transcends the soulish aspect where the mind, will and emotions reside but also involves **physical changes** within the brain's neurological pathways as will be seen in this chapter.

Because it involves the changing of brain patterns as well as the secretion of some of the bodies' strongest endogenous chemicals, the bondage is at a much deeper level and freedom from this bondage involves intensified counselling in cooperation with the Holy Spirit as well as time for the process of renewing and recovery. Family history and involvement also plays a great role in the handling of sexual addictions as will be seen.

Sexual addiction, akin to other addictions, can be described as an addict having a **"pathological relationship with a mood-altering experience"** (the same way that an alcoholic is described as having a pathological relationship with a mood altering chemical) - they essentially trade a "sick relationship" with an event or a process for healthy relationships with other human beings<sup>8</sup>.

---

<sup>6</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 5.

<sup>7</sup> According to 1 Thessalonians 5:23 God created mankind as a triune being having a spirit, soul and a body

<sup>8</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p.14.

---

This “mood altering” addiction becomes the integral part of the addicts’ life and soon, as the addiction progresses, the “secret life” full of sexual addiction becomes more real than their “public lives<sup>9</sup>”. In this way they gradually lose touch with reality or their reality becomes so distorted that the sexual addiction becomes a **form of insanity** as they are no longer grounded in reality<sup>10</sup>.

Contrary to popular belief, sexual addiction is a problem of the **mind** as it sprouts from a faulty belief system, or rather a faulty **mental model**. This chapter will explore these mental models and how the attack of Satan on these models places human beings in the strongest bondages they will ever find themselves in.

## 2. MENTAL MODELS

Wikipedia defines a Mental Model as follows:

***“[A mental model] an explanation of someone’s thought process about how something works in the real world. It is a representation of the surrounding world, the relationships between its various parts and a person’s intuitive perception about his or her own acts and their consequences<sup>11</sup>.”***

The American computer engineer and system scientist<sup>12</sup>, Jay Wright Forrester, defined a mental model as ***“the image of the world around us, which we carry in our head, is just a model.”***

In this way, each and every person has a set of core beliefs or a **belief system** that is the sum of his assumptions, judgments and myths that he/she holds as true<sup>13</sup>.

---

<sup>9</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: .CompCare Publishers, pp.14-15.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid. p. 15.

<sup>11</sup> Mental model. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mental\\_model#History](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mental_model#History))

<sup>12</sup> Wright Forrester. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jay\\_Wright\\_Forrester](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jay_Wright_Forrester))

<sup>13</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare



This core belief system is akin to a blueprint or “data pack” that contains information about the individuals’ **value or worth, relationships, needs and sexuality**<sup>14</sup>. This belief system contains information about what “options” (answers, solutions, methods, possibilities, ways of behaving) are available to the individual in any given situation<sup>15</sup>.

It is based on these models that a person<sup>16</sup>:

- Plan and make decisions
- Interpret other people’s actions
- Make meaning out of life experiences
- Solve problems
- Pattern out relationships
- Develop their careers
- Establish priorities

The importance of the **mental model** must be reiterated as this is the filter through which an individual **makes decisions**<sup>17</sup>. Based on this fact, it is important to realize that Satan and his entourage works overtime in developing wrong mental models within the minds of God’s children, as it is from these wrong core beliefs that sexual (and any other form) of addiction is fuelled.

This attack on the mind starts specifically at a young age, when the mind of a child is still pliable and innocent: like a blank sheet of paper onto which information, shaping them for the rest of their lives, can be written. This then becomes the mental model through which they experience life and make their decisions.

---

Publishers, p. 15.

<sup>14</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 15.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid. p. 16.

---

Sexual addiction begins with **delusional thought processes** that are rooted in the addict's belief system<sup>18</sup>. As a belief system is that set of core beliefs that an addict believe to be true about themselves that in turn affects how they perceive reality, these core beliefs forms the integral springboard from which impaired thinking of an addict have their origin<sup>19</sup>. The Bible clearly warns:

***“Above all else, guard your heart, for everything you do flows from it.”***

***Proverbs 4:23 (NIV)***

It is clear, the emphases is placed on what the **most important thing** in the lives of each and every human being is: **above all else** – the human race are to guard their hearts. They are to be vigilant about what goes on in their minds and what they are thinking about as this determines **everything else** in their lives.

The importance of this verse is thoroughly neglected by most believers, hence the attack of the enemy proves successful time and again as can be seen in the world. Mental illness, addictions, murder, violence and everything that sets itself up against the Word of God is running rampage as a result of faulty mental models and belief systems as will be seen.

Mental models are **physically** established in the brain via neural pathways. Neural pathways consists of connections of cells, called neurons, that are responsible for the transmission of neural impulses (or “messages”) throughout the brain.

Starting in the early childhood years, these physical pathways are what make up the mental models that are established within the brain.

---

<sup>18</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 15

<sup>19</sup> Ibid. p. 15.

Another important aspect of the brain regarding mental models is how it forms these mental models. The brain functions to create a habit of anything new that is learnt<sup>20</sup>. It does this by creating new neuronal pathways where neural cells connect with each other, the more the “thinking pathway” is used, the more neural networks form between the brain cells, the more established the thought pattern will become. For instance, learning to drive a motor vehicle is difficult until the skills have become “learnt” or innate (strong neural networks are formed) so that after a while one does not have to “think” about doing it any more, it comes “naturally”.

The same goes for any mental model that is established, whether it is eating with a knife and fork or becoming sexually aroused while watching visual images of pornographic nature. In this way, the more the pathway is “stimulated” the more habitual it becomes.

It is said that the more **dominant** a certain thinking pattern becomes (is “used”), the more it becomes “engrained” in the brain and the individual will eventually start to function more and more in that particular mental model<sup>21</sup>. In other words, the dominant thought pattern will become the lenses through which everything else is also seen. It is from this principle that sexual addiction has its power in becoming more and more dominant in an individuals’ life: once a thought pattern of sexual nature is established and enhanced by giving in to the temptations of sex (or pornography) over and over, this thought process will eventually infiltrate the rest of an individuals’ life and they will start seeing everything through a “sexual filter”.

The following section will explore pornography (porn) as a sexual addiction that will serve as a model to provide and explain mental models as well as provide explanations for the typical behaviour seen in various sexual behaviours.

---

<sup>20</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 56.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid. p. 64.

### 3. PORNOGRAPHY AS AN ADDICTION: INSIGHT INTO THE MENTAL MODEL OF SEXUAL ADDICTIONS AND BEHAVIOURS

Sexual addiction is one of a very powerful nature in that the mental model for sexual intimacy is built into the very existence of a human being by God and is perfected in the safe boundaries of a marriage. When this mental model (or core belief system) is attacked by the enemy, its ramifications are endless as it sets one up for a life of perverted sexual intimacies and behaviours. In addition the “sexual” mental model is one that not only affects the mind but has very strong **emotional, biological, and chemical connections** throughout the brain and entire body thereby affecting the entire being of the human being<sup>22</sup>.

In this way, by distorting what God meant to be a holy, wholesome, fulfilling experience and a celebration of intimacy between husband and wife, Satan succeeds in using the very design of the human being against him and it all starts in the **mind**.

Pornography is the counterfeit model for sexual intimacy and was designed to mimic the God given healthy model for sexual intimacy<sup>23</sup>. Sexual intimacy was designed to be the highlight of two lives joined together, not just the physical act of sex in itself<sup>24</sup>.

As the power of sexual addiction involves and resides in the body, pornography can be seen as akin to drug addiction/substance abuse in that it causes a release of endogenous chemicals to which an individual can become addicted the same way they would when using chemically induced drugs<sup>25</sup>.

---

<sup>22</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 37.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid. p. 38.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid. pp. 60-61.

Pharmaceutical drugs used during substance abuse work by “mimicking” the bodies’ own endogenous neurotransmitters in that it travels to the brain and other body receptors and induces the release of the bodies’ own natural endorphins<sup>26</sup>.

Prozac (an antidepressant medication) works in this way: it triggers the body to release its own serotonin – “the feel good hormone<sup>27</sup>” releasing a feeling of well-being within the individual.

By viewing ***pornography*** the body is triggered to release the same endogenous chemicals that is released during sexual intercourse, and the viewer becomes addicted to these chemicals just the same way he/she would when taking drugs to obtain the same effect when the body releases endogenous chemicals<sup>28</sup>.

In this way the bodies’ natural chemistry is used as a drug and pornography can be considered a ***chemical addiction***<sup>29</sup>. Dr Judith Reisman (one of the worlds’ leading researchers in the field of pornography as a drug addiction) and her colleagues explain<sup>30</sup>:

***“A pornographic psychopharmacological flood yields epinephrine, testosterone, endorphins (endogenous morphine), oxytocin, dopamine, serotonin, phenylethylamine, and other pharmacological stimuli. In her book published by the Institute of Medicine, Sandra Ackerman notes that epinephrine alone gets the “vertebrate brain” “high” on its own self produced morphine or heroin.***

---

<sup>26</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, pp. 60-61.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid.

<sup>29</sup> Ibid. pp. 61-62.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid. pp. 60-61.

**Pornography, designed to alert the procreating instinct to the need to immediately respond, would be especially likely to cause users to self-medicate, kick-starting these endogenous LSD, adrenalin/norepinephrine, morphine-like neurochemicals for a hormonal flood, a “rush” allegedly analogous to the rush attained using various street drugs.**

**Arousal dependence [through pornography] may be compared to biochemical alterations related to excessive amphetamine use. Satiation effects [hours looking at Internet porn] may be compared to those related to opiate use. Fantasy behaviour can be related to such neurotransmitters as dopamine, norepinephrine, or serotonin, all of which are chemically similar to the main psychedelic drugs such as LSD. Vanderbilt University psychiatrist Peter Martin’s research on “normal subjects” finds the brain activity experienced in sexual arousal of his normal subjects “looks like that accompanying drug consumption”.**

**Addiction [can] exist within the body’s own chemistry. Any activity produces salient alterations in mood can lead to compulsion, loss of control and progressively disturbed functioning. Pornography is not like a drug, it is an endogenously processed poly drug providing intense, although misleading sensory rewards.”**

Pornography literally changes the physical and chemical structure of an addicts’ system at a **cellular level** and a PET<sup>31</sup> brain scan reveals a similar brain pattern as in drug addicts<sup>32</sup>.

---

<sup>31</sup> A PET (Positron emission tomography) is a imaging technique in science that produces three-dimensional images of functional processes in the body. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Positron\\_emission\\_tomography](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Positron_emission_tomography))

<sup>32</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 63.

---

In other words, physical brain activity during sexual intimacy resembles that of persons physically taking drugs as a chemical stimulant.

According to other research<sup>33</sup> there is an overlap between the sexual neuropathways and the neuropathways that exists in addiction<sup>34</sup>. It is believed that the sexual neuropathway is the prototype for all addictive behaviour<sup>35</sup>.

In order to understand how the bodies' own chemicals may be considered a chemical addiction during sexual addiction one needs to understand what physically happens in the brain during a sexual experience.

### **3.1 How does pornography alter the brain?**

Sexual arousal occurs in the brain<sup>36</sup>. The brain has a network of neural pathways<sup>37</sup>. It can be said that the brains of men who are addicted to pornography have been "rewired" by their experiences with pornography<sup>38</sup>.

It is exactly here, the brain, where the feelings of sexual intimacy, arousal, the focus and ecstasy originate and it is here where the attack of the enemy is launched<sup>39</sup>.

Addiction to pornography occurs in the brain and as the addiction becomes more and more prominent in the individuals' life their brain is physically changed to respond sexually to pornographic images they are exposed to<sup>40</sup>.

---

<sup>33</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 88.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid. p. 87.

<sup>37</sup> Ibid.

<sup>38</sup> Struthers WM (2009) Wired for intimacy: How pornography hijacks the male brain. Illinois: Intervarsity Press, p. 15.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid.

There are three neuropathways in sex: the first causes human beings to be sexually aroused by others, the second is the neurochemistry of “romance” that involves great arousal, intensity and obsession during which dopamine is released and serotonin declines<sup>41</sup>. The third is the “attachment” pathway that allows us to “bond” with one another<sup>42</sup>.

Powerful neurotransmitters are released during each of these neuropathways used during sex. Access to these pathways comes from our own mental model or “lovemap” of what we consider to be arousing to us that are formed between the ages of five and eight<sup>43</sup>.

The following discussion borrows extensively from the findings of Dr Page Bailey, a leading neurophysiologist, who describes a model to explain the powerful process that happens during sexual intimacy which creates powerful physical, emotional and chemical changes<sup>44</sup>. It will provide a background in order to highlight the importance of mental models as they influence and make use of these internal processes.

During sexual arousal and the act of sex itself, the brain secretes a myriad of endogenous chemicals that intensifies and makes the sexual experience possible. Each of these chemicals plays a role in “rewiring” the brain and establishing the mental model for sex within the mind.

The model explaining sexual arousal and the sexual experience is called the “Narrowing process” and the process is subsequently summarized as follows for a healthy marriage and then for a pornographic experience<sup>45</sup>:

---

<sup>41</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) *Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction*. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 88.

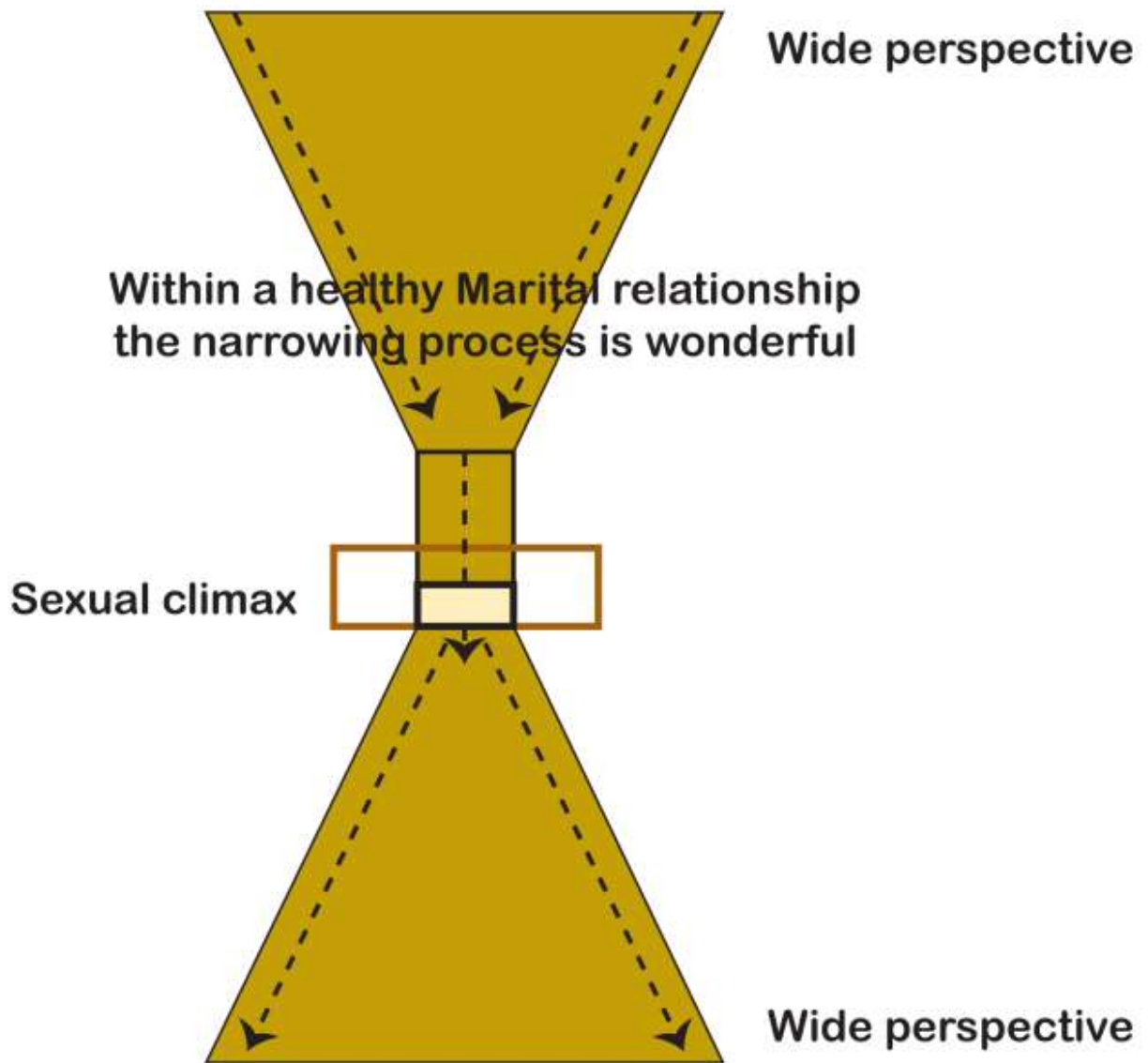
<sup>42</sup> Ibid.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid.

<sup>44</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family*. USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 39.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid.



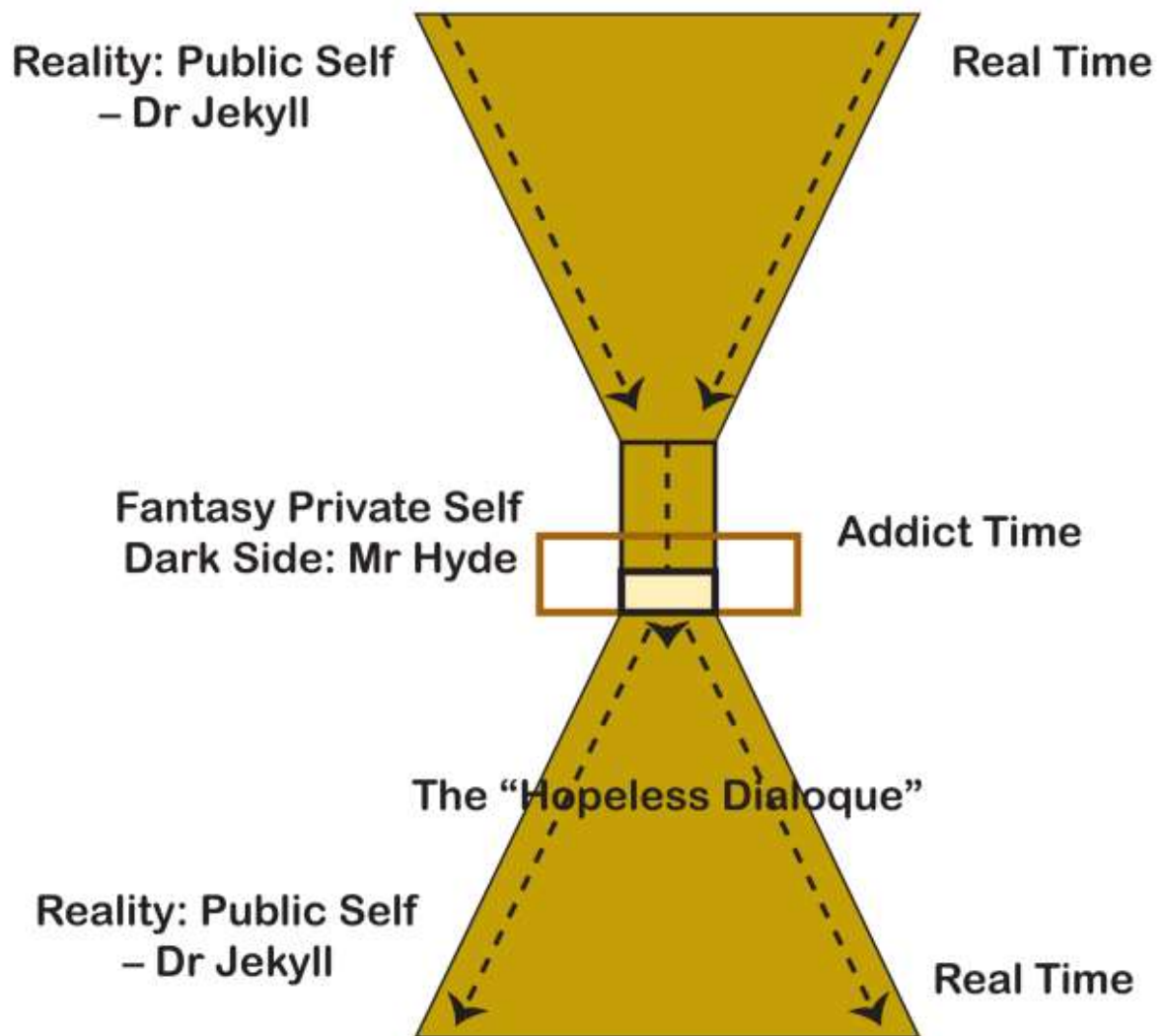


**Figure 1.** The funnel experience in a healthy marriage<sup>46</sup>.

---

<sup>46</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 39.

---



**Figure 2.** The pornographic funnel<sup>47</sup>.

---

<sup>47</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 48.

---

### 3.2 PROCESS/STAGE: THE NARROWING PROCESS

#### 3.2.1 Healthy marriage<sup>48</sup>

At the top of the funnel the married couple enjoy a wide perspective of the world and the people around them. Then, as they become physically intimate their brains begin to narrow in focus. As Dr Bailey notes: “Sexual climax is the most narrowly and powerfully focused singular event that the brain can engage in. This *crescendo* experience can only take place on a very narrow landing strip.” In order to reach this place, the brain must narrowly focus its attention and block out all distractions (work, the children, paying the bills, etc.).

#### 3.2.2 Pornographic experience<sup>49</sup>:

When an individual enters the funnel through the viewing of pornography the physical and chemical processes are virtually identical to those in marital sexual intimacy but the **outcomes are radically different**. Before entering the funnel the porn addict enjoys a wide perspective on the world, they view this as their reality: their public self, the person they want the world to see (Dr Jekyll). The moment they begin to view pornography their brain immediately begins to narrow its focus. As in the marriage funnel, the addict begins to block out distractions – but he is blocking out much more. He/she is alone. The object of the addicts narrowing is not his/her wife or husband but **pornographic images**. So along with work, paying bills etc. the addict beings blocking out all thoughts of God, his marriage, family, morals, commitments and consequences.

Pornographers make sure that none of the things that really matter (tender, loving things of the heart and spirit like family values etc.) are connected to the pornographic mental model – they are considered a distraction and impediment to pornographic arousal and eventual climax.

---

<sup>48</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 39.

<sup>49</sup> Ibid. p. 49.

The porn addict's mind is in control as his heart and spirit are not connected to the funnel process, all he knows is "me-me, mine-mine, more-more". Without a heart and a spirit to create balance and "reigning in" the brain is completely unrestricted to not only narrow, but to **super narrow** as a result of the pornographic experience.

### 3.3 THE RELEASE OF NATURAL CHEMICALS:

#### 3.3.1 Healthy marriage<sup>50</sup>:

##### 3.3.1.1 Dopamine<sup>51</sup>

This chemical produces extremely focussed attention, unwavering motivation, energy and goal-directed behaviours. It causes each spouse to focus intensely on the other excluding everything else. It even helps each to concentrate on the positive qualities of the other and ignore the negative.

It triggers feelings of ecstasy and exhilaration, increases arousal to outside stimulus, and creates a "sexy mood". A release of dopamine is associated with craving and dependency in addictions. Even the craving of sexual intimacy itself has been linked to dopamine.

##### 3.3.1.2 Norepinephrine<sup>52</sup>

The chemical generates exhilaration and increased energy by giving the body a shot of natural adrenaline. It has been linked to raising **memory capacity**. Whatever experience is created in the presence of this chemical is "seared" in the brain. This is an important fact as when it comes to bonding, the spouse will remember these moments as part of the experience.

---

<sup>50</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, pp. 40-42.

<sup>51</sup> Ibid.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid.

### 3.3.1.3 Testosterone<sup>53</sup>

Is the hormone of sexual desire for both men and women. For men it is the key hormone of desire, triggering feelings of positive energy and well-being. When it is depleted both men and women experienced lower libido.

All three dopamine, norepinephrine and testosterone pave the way for the human nervous system to experience the most powerful neurochemical of all: oxytocin.

### 3.3.1.4 Oxytocin<sup>54</sup>

In women this chemical triggers contractions during child birth and milk production during nursing. It is the “bonding” chemical between mother and her new born child. The same is true when a dad holds their new born child for the first time.

It is also the “cuddle chemical” in that oxytocin levels rise as couples hold hands, hugs or watches a romantic movie together. During sexual intimacy, oxytocin triggers the contractions at climax. At sexual climax oxytocin levels spike in an immense neurochemical rush that forges a powerful **bond between husband and wife**, producing feelings of **oneness, closeness and attachment**. This bonding continues even after sexual intimacy. It is believed that oxytocin causes one to be attracted to certain features in ones mate so that each time we see one another, the bond is strengthened. Each time oxytocin is released in the relationship the couple draws closer and closer to one another. The flood of oxytocin at climax serves as a natural tranquilizer: it lowers blood pressure, blunting sensitivity to pain and stress and induces sleep.

---

<sup>53</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, pp. 40-42.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid.

### 3.3.1.5 Serotonin<sup>55</sup>

This chemical is released right after climax, bringing deep feelings of calmness, satisfaction and release from stress.

### 3.3.1.6 The experience is more than just physical<sup>56</sup>:

The mind, heart and spirit of the two spouses are joined together. Feelings of **love, closeness and appreciation** are brought to the forefront. The joining together of the physical bodies becomes a symbol of the joining together of every facet of our beings. God meant for this experience to be a joining of their whole selves: heart, mind, flesh and spirit. Such a union is only possible when there is **total commitment to each other**.

### 3.3.1.7 A climax of many things<sup>57</sup>:

After all the aforementioned took place the husband and wife reaches the narrowest part of the funnel – the climax. The climax is only part of the picture – the final crescendo represents a culmination of all the things that the husband and wife have shared: all the everyday life triumphs and tribulations that make up the marriage.

Climax therefore includes everything that the husband and wife have shared together: it was never designed to stand alone as an isolated act. It symbolizes **oneness and unity** in all things and it becomes a token of their being totally committed, faithful and bonded to each other. This provides meaning to this sacred experience.

---

<sup>55</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, pp. 40-42.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid. p. 42.

<sup>57</sup> Ibid. p. 43.

### 3.3.1.8 Better for the experience<sup>58</sup>:

After their funnel experience their wide perspective returns. The intimate experience leave the couple feeling deeper in love and appreciation, a stronger bonding and attachment, they feel more fulfilled, energized, and positive, and better equipped to work individually and together to succeed in their overall lives and family responsibilities.

God's perfection can be witnessed in the beautiful orchestra of all the physical elements working together to achieve what God intended for a marriage: a perfect, loving union between two people as they become **one**.

This is quite in contrast to what happens during a pornographic experience – the counterfeit of what Satan offers as the perverted truth for what God intended for it to be.

### 3.3.2 Pornographic experience<sup>59</sup>:

The viewer experiences the same release of endogenous chemicals as when a married couple are having sex. But in this case the pornography viewer is having a sexual experience in order to escape the pressures of daily life and thereby **self-medicates**.

#### 3.3.2.1 Dopamine<sup>60</sup>

Produces extremely focussed attention, unwavering motivation, energy and goal-directed behaviours. It causes the viewer to focus intensely on the pornographic **image** excluding everything else around him/her.

---

<sup>58</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 45.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid. pp. 50-53.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid.

The viewer only sees attractive bodies, focusses on the perceived positives, while shutting out all other truth and reality. Dopamine increases energy and arousal to the porn images, triggering feelings of ecstasy and exhilaration. A release of dopamine is associated with the cravings and dependency in various drug addictions. This would help explain why porn addicts experience powerful cravings and dependency as they descend into the funnel and have withdrawal symptoms when they attempt to discontinue pornography use.

### 3.3.2.2 Norepinephrine<sup>61</sup>

Generates exhilaration and increased energy by giving the body a shot of natural adrenaline. The viewer gets a “rush” not unlike that felt while participating in a competitive sporting event or during a thrilling amusement park ride. Norepinephrine also increases memory capacity. Whatever stimulus is produced is **seared into the brain**.

A tidal wave of this chemical is released at climax. This explains why porn addicts can recall the images seen with vivid clarity even years later. This also means that an addict doesn't have to be at the computer screen to “see” pornography.

In this way this chemical **guarantees that he is equipped with his own, private, mobile porn library, a catalogue of images he can access at any time for self-medication**. Unfortunately when one is trying to overcome a porn addiction, the same vivid images often “pop” into the mind at the most inappropriate and frustrating times. In other words, this is an addiction that cannot just be escaped.

---

<sup>61</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, pp. 50-53.

---



### 3.3.2.3 Testosterone<sup>62</sup>

This is the hormone of sexual desire and arousal for both men and women. Testosterone levels increase dramatically during porn viewing, eliciting a self-sustaining, building cycle. Pornography triggers the release of testosterone, which in turn, increases the desire for **more porn**, triggering once more the release of even more testosterone etc. To make matters worse, testosterone takes an already “narrowing” male brain and causes it to narrow even further.

Thus, this natural chemical intensifies the male focus on the female body parts and fortifies the brain so that he can remain in the funnel for many hours without tiring. Add in dopamine and norepinephrine and time and reality while in the funnel virtually disappear, and time is lost for the porn addict.

### 3.3.2.4 Oxytocin<sup>63</sup>

The powerful chemical is also released during porn viewing but this time the companion is not there. The porn viewer gets “locked in” on features or body parts. A tragic irony exists in the fact that many men seek out pornography, in part because they feel lonely and isolated.

An oxytocin rush triggers a powerful bonding feeling, temporarily filling the “hole in the soul”. However oxytocin levels quickly dissipate, the joyful bonding feeling disappears and the individual is left **more empty and lonely** than before. In addition oxytocin acts as a natural tranquilizer, lowering blood pressure and blunting sensitivity to pain and stress.

Thus individuals also seek oxytocin rush to cope with the stress and pressures of life. But once the “high” is over, the realities of life return.

---

<sup>62</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, pp. 50-53.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid.

### 3.3.2.5 Serotonin<sup>64</sup>

This chemical is “used” to self-medicate and escape the stress and pressures of life.

In contrast to what is supposed to be a fulfilling, loving experience in which the bodies chemicals serve to bond and fulfil two spouses to each other, these chemicals now induces an addictive cycle in which the individual becomes addicted to that [pornography] triggering the release of these chemicals. The pornography viewer literally becomes a slave of his or her addiction in the hands of God’s enemy.

The importance of controlling the mind is clearly elicited here: ***the mind is responsible for making decisions*** – after making the wrong decision about engaging in pornography several times, the body becomes enslaved as a result of this poor decision. What is more, endogenous chemicals, like norephinephrine, ensure that pornographic images are “cemented” into the memory banks of the brain. The result: an addiction that cannot be escaped even if the individual is not physically viewing pornography.

### 3.3.2.6 The experience is more than just sexual<sup>65</sup>:

The experience between the individual and the computer screen is a “heartless” one. The only similarity in the sexual nature between the viewing of porn and sex between husband and wife is sexual ***arousal***. Everything else differs. The pornography viewing-mental model contains a vast array of connections to many emotions, feelings and memories that have nothing to do with sex. It is these “other” connections that give pornography an enormous power that goes beyond the sexual.

---

<sup>64</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink p. 50-53.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid. p. 53.

Porn viewing **links emotions and feelings that do not belong together** – sexual arousal is mixed with shock, fear and anger, sexual climax is combined with guilt, shame, frustration and helplessness. This miss-matching is what advertisers use to trigger powerful mental models in consumers.

Pornographers will mix nudity with sexual images of perversion, aggression, submission, violence, incest, rape, torture, bestiality, murder and more. In this way the individual viewing pornography experiences a mixture of all of these feelings: shock, arousal, anger, excitement, guilt, lust, shame, attraction, fear of getting caught, frustration of giving in and memories of his or her own sexual abuse and trauma etc. The emotions and feelings are directly contrary to the way that mankind was designed to feel during sexual intimacy in marriage – a sexual perversion.

As a result of these conflicting emotions a “fight or flight” stress situation is created in the body. This natural reaction to such confusion then triggers the release of even more endogenous chemicals. It happens in the following way: visual images are stored as emotional memories in the brain before the logic centres realize what has happened. The “logical brain” catches up and screams: “this isn’t right, stop!” while the emotional/pleasure centres: “but it feels so good and I want to escape”. This creates confusion and conflict in the mind.

As a result this confusion and conflict places the nervous system under stress and brings on a flight or fight reaction and the adrenal gland secretes the stress hormone **cortisol** that in turn sets the body up to battle stress.

In this way the entire porn watching experience is **intensified and supercharged** – far beyond what sexual arousal could accomplish. In this way the body found in this vicious cycle is totally overloaded and not able to handle the overwhelming level of conflicting stimulation.

The body has no natural coping mechanism to deal with this overload. If one allows pornographic images to be “seared” into one’s mind without filtering it through as is required by the Word of God, this could lead to a lifetime of addiction propelled by the images in the mind. 2 Corinthians 5:10 warns that one will be held responsible for everything that was done in the body, whether good or bad.

Important to notice that sexual arousal is a result of a visual stimulus. The brain cannot tell the difference between reality and fantasy as in the case of pornography. It is for this reason that Jesus Christ warned:

***“You have heard that it was said to those of old, You shall not commit adultery. But I say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart.”***

***Matthew 5:26-27***

This is a profound statement by the Son of God and should give mankind insight into how powerful the mind really is. In this sense, a human being will be held responsible for what he or she lets into their mind and what they allow to play on the “screens of their minds”. Failing to obey this command has severe consequences. When the greatest king of all times, king David in the Bible, allowed himself to lust after a woman ***in his mind***, he not only committed adultery with her but it also resulted in him murdering her husband on the battle field. The story reads as follows:

***“And it came to pass, after the year was expired, at the time when kings go forth to battle, that David sent Joab, and his servants with him, and all Israel; and they destroyed the children of Ammon, and besieged Rabbah. But David tarried still at Jerusalem.***

***And it came to pass in an eveningtide, that David arose from off his bed, and walked upon the roof of the king's house: and from the roof he saw a woman washing herself; and the woman was very beautiful to look upon. And David sent and enquired after the woman. And one said, Is not this Bathsheba, the daughter of Eliam, the wife of Uriah the Hittite? And David sent messengers, and took her; and she came in unto him, and he lay with her; for she was purified from her uncleanness: and she returned unto her house. And the woman conceived, and sent and told David, and said, I am with child.***

**And David sent to Joab, saying, Send me Uriah the Hittite. And Joab sent Uriah to David. And when Uriah was come unto him, David demanded of him how Joab did, and how the people did, and how the war prospered. And David said to Uriah, Go down to thy house, and wash thy feet. And Uriah departed out of the king's house, and there followed him a mess of meat from the king. But Uriah slept at the door of the king's house with all the servants of his lord, and went not down to his house. And when they had told David, saying, Uriah went not down unto his house, David said unto Uriah, Camest thou not from thy journey? why then didst thou not go down unto thine house?**

**And Uriah said unto David, The ark, and Israel, and Judah, abide in tents; and my lord Joab and the servants of my lord are encamped in the open fields; shall I then go into mine house, to eat and to drink, and to lie with my wife? as thou livest, and as thy soul liveth, I will not do this thing. And David said to Uriah, Tarry here today also, and tomorrow I will let thee depart. So Uriah abode in Jerusalem that day, and the morrow. And when David had called him, he did eat and drink before him; and he made him drunk: and at even he went out to lie on his bed with the servants of his lord, but went not down to his house.**

**And it came to pass in the morning, that David wrote a letter to Joab, and sent it by the hand of Uriah. And he wrote in the letter, saying, Set ye Uriah in the forefront of the hottest battle, and retire ye from him, that he may be smitten, and die. And it came to pass, when Joab observed the city that he assigned Uriah unto a place where he knew that valiant men were. And the men of the city went out, and fought with Joab: and there fell some of the people of the servants of David; and Uriah the Hittite died also. Then Joab sent and told David all the things concerning the war; And charged the messenger, saying, When thou hast made an end of telling the matters of the war unto the king, And if so be that the king's wrath arise, and he say unto thee, Wherefore approached ye so nigh unto the city when ye did fight? knew ye not that they would shoot from the wall?**

**Who smote Abimelech the son of Jerubbesheth? did not a woman cast a piece of a millstone upon him from the wall, that he died in Thebez? why went ye nigh the wall? then say thou, Thy servant Uriah the Hittite is dead also. So the messenger went, and came and shewed David all that Joab had sent him for.**

**And the messenger said unto David, Surely the men prevailed against us, and came out unto us into the field, and we were upon them even unto the entering of the gate.**

**And the shooters shot from off the wall upon thy servants; and some of the king's servants be dead, and thy servant Uriah the Hittite is dead also.**

**Then David said unto the messenger, Thus shalt thou say unto Joab, Let not this thing displease thee, for the sword devoureth one as well as another: make thy battle more strong against the city, and overthrow it: and encourage thou him. And when the wife of Uriah heard that Uriah her husband was dead, she mourned for her husband. And when the mourning was past, David sent and fetched her to his house, and she became his wife, and bare him a son. But the thing that David had done displeased the LORD.”**

## **2 Samuel 11**

Notice, the whole adulterous affair, the murder of Bathsheba's husband and the eventually dying of the son born to David and Bathsheba (2 Samuel 12) was a result of **lust** that began in the **mind of David**. How different history would have been for King David had he at that moment take control of his thoughts and brought it to obedience?

### **3.3.2.7 An empty and hollow climax<sup>66</sup>:**

Pornography and mainstream media portray the climax as an isolated event. When this sacred crescendo experience is severed from the holistic marriage relationship, it produces a devastating disease and dysfunction throughout the entire nervous system. When climax happens at the end of watching pornography, it creates a **dependency** on the highest possible level.

Climax at the end of pornography session is like watching a play featuring the closing act alone, while very stimulating, it leaves the viewer empty and hollow.

---

<sup>66</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 55.

---

When one takes away the whole life experience it leaves one with the sexual act alone – porn **isolates this moment** that was meant to be a climax and courtship, a climax of commitment, climax of all things present in the heart, spirit and union of husband and wife.

God did not create sexual climax to be an end-in-itself event. When used as a **purely selfish** means to experience a rush of pleasure and self-medication, it creates an imbalanced, dysfunctional and diseased state in the human system, an illness, just like a drug or alcohol dependency.

The brain's habitual tendency works against the success of pornography to achieve climax. The brain wants to turn every activity into a habit as quickly as possible.

When one uses pornography to reach climax the brain desensitizes to the images, habituates to them and eventually becomes bored. An increase in the variety of images and time spent on the internet is required stimulation levels. Finding one variety of images no longer arousing enough to move down the funnel to climax, many internet porn viewers seek more extreme images, sending the viewer cascading into a downward spiral of increased depravity and perversion.

### **3.3.2.8 When reality returns – the Hopeless dialogue<sup>67</sup>:**

In contrast to the positive feelings of love, attachment and mutual appreciation, the heartless drug high of porn and climax quickly dissipate. The hopeless dialogue begins: what have I done? What was I thinking? **The overpowering flood of chemicals overrides his cognitive thought and reasoning abilities.**

---

<sup>67</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 57.

---

The frontal lobes, the logic centre of the brain, are virtually shut down and the limbic system, which controls the pleasure/emotional centres of the brain, takes over. ***Rational thinking does not stand a chance against the most powerfully focused and narrowed events that the brain can experience – climax.***

The viewer will lose every time. Intense feelings of guilt, shame, sadness, frustration and regret washes over his mind as another mental model is accessed and reality sets in and sometimes this despair is so great that he will go right back and do it again.

Sometimes the viewer enters a control phase in which he promises himself that this will not happen again. He then rigidly attempts to govern every part of his life, especially the moral and spiritual aspect, and generally things can go along “okay” until stress and anxiety of life or a negative event takes place – he then self-medicates again. This process may repeat itself for many years.

Notice that ***all rational thinking*** is “cut out” once the bodies’ chemicals are released. This is why many times pornography addicts after going down the funnel will do something that they would never do when being in their “right state of mind” thereby destroying not only relationships but also themselves in the process (like a grandfather who exposed himself to his granddaughter after watching pornography and entering the funnel<sup>68</sup>). This destroys lives exactly as the enemy planned.

This should give a clear warning as to how powerful a sexual addiction is and the type of respect and caution one should have when dealing with the mind and sexual addictions.

---

<sup>68</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, pp. 138-139.

---



An example illustrates this point clearly:

Bill a compulsive sex addict involved in prostitution, exhibitionism, alcoholism and rape explains his thoughts/feelings while driving in the car and seeing a pretty girl:

***“I would tell myself it was not going to happen, but did not have any control to stop it. Completely powerless, a feeling of being taken over by a strong emotionally uncontrollable power that I did not understand. Afterwards, I would feel so ashamed of what I have done and then starting right over again, maybe even staying out all night or even looking for a prostitute...I would get home and wonder why I had done it. Then not knowing where I was at, what I had been doing.***

***You can well imagine how apart I was from my family because of the guilty feeling, shamefulness for the time away from home; sad because of all of it. Angry at myself for not doing anything about it or being able to control it Why am I this way? Why me? How can a person live that way for ten to twelve years and face themselves?***

***Knowing what you are, the deep down truth crawling around in the back of your mind and the pit of your stomach. Everybody looks at you and you're not able to look at them. Dear God help me<sup>69</sup>.”***

Notice from this real life account how the addict was **unable to control** himself. Also notice there is a constant war going in on the inside of him. This is a result of a mental model that is activated automatically and him descending down the funnel where rational thought does not apply. This is the power of sexual addiction and it all starts in the mind.

---

<sup>69</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 64.

---

From these accounts one can clearly see that during a healthy sexual marriage there is a sacred power that binds a husband and wife together in every way, whereas the satanic counterfeit [pornography] takes advantage of the sacred power within the human being and lets it work against them. The sexual experience as experienced in the way that God intended it to be: within a marriage is sacred, holy and very powerful<sup>70</sup>. It can be summarized as follows<sup>71</sup>:

***“Sexual intercourse is a sacred covenant between husband and wife, symbolizing oneness, fidelity and unity in all things. Sexual climax is as culmination of everything they have sacrificed and shared together, a celebration of their complete and total commitment, a crowning symbol of their marriage.”***

Now that a clear picture of how the body and brain is physically altered during a sexual experience the following section will deal with the issues of the mind during sexual addiction.

#### **4. MENTAL MODELS IN PORNOGRAPHY AND THE SEXUAL ADDICTION CYCLE**

Howard Shaffer, head of Harvard's Division on Addiction makes the next important point<sup>72</sup>:

***“...I suggested that a lot of addiction is the result of experience – repetitive, high-emotion, high frequency experience...but it's become clear that neuroadaptation – that is, changes in the neural circuitry that helps perpetuate the behaviour – occurs even in the absence of drug taking.”***

---

<sup>70</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 46.

<sup>71</sup> Ibid. p. 44.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid. p. 61.

From his findings we see that the mental model of pornography is established by repetitively reinforcing the extreme sexual images used in pornography to eventually result in the wrong mental model becoming dominant in a person's life<sup>73</sup>. As the combination of interconnected sexual images, conflicting emotions, chemical release and eventual climax are reinforced by these pornographic images, deep "ruts" of these thinking patterns are formed within the mind of the victim<sup>74</sup>.

The danger herein lies that as this mental model now exists as the dominant model in which the individual operates, any form of external stressor, such as the pressures of daily life, boredom, loneliness etc. could trigger the individual to act in line with this mental model in order to "escape"<sup>75</sup>.

Eventually the individual runs into the danger of the model becoming automatically triggered as a result of any pressures they may come into contact with as the mental model has become further engrained<sup>76</sup> as is explained below.

This idea of the brain changing itself is called neuroplasticity<sup>77</sup>. In a sense every thought, feeling, habit, skill or behaviour (your mental model) has a corresponding neuropathway that fires in your brain<sup>78</sup>.

These pathways can be "rewired" as new skills are learned, in this way every time a person views porn, the release of dopamine strengthens the connection between the cells<sup>79</sup>.

---

<sup>73</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 63.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid.

<sup>76</sup> Ibid.

<sup>77</sup> Relevant Magazine: (Relevant Magazine: <http://www.relevantmagazine.com/life/whole-life/features/29332-this-is-your-brain-on-porn>)

<sup>78</sup> Ibid.

<sup>79</sup> Ibid.

The stronger the connection the easier it becomes for the cells to communicate along that path – much like a highway that is being built instead of a small, narrow footpath – the more one walks on the narrow footpath the less effort it becomes as the path widens and becomes more smooth<sup>80</sup>.

The more a certain pathway is used, the stronger the connections become, the easier one would act on that specific neural pathway<sup>81</sup>. This “dominant neural pathway” becomes the pathway of least resistance and in this way everything that a person does is done through this “pornographic filter” or “pathway”.

We can thus clearly see that the addiction ***starts as a mental model***. A view on current statistics gives a clear indication of how many individuals are trapped into this way of living<sup>82</sup>.

#### 4.1 THE PORNOGRAPHIC INDUSTRY

The pornography message from the world is:

***“Pornography is a harmless pastime, even a healthy sexual outlet. It’s your first amendment right. What you do in the privacy of your own home or office doesn’t hurt anyone. If it feels good, what’s the big deal?”***

In this statement the very core ***deception of pornography*** is captured: it is made out to be good and fulfilling, even seen as ***ones right***. The deadly sting underneath this beautifully portrayed deception cannot be clearly seen until it is too late and one has become trapped in its snare. Pornography destroys relationships, families and individuals in its evil claws.

---

<sup>80</sup> Relevant Magazine: (Relevant Magazine: <http://www.relevantmagazine.com/life/whole-life/features/29332-this-is-your-brain-on-porn>)

<sup>81</sup> Ibid.

<sup>82</sup> According to Covenant eyes: (<http://www.covenanteyes.com/pornstats/>)

---

Those who believe that “visual addiction does not have obvious consequences<sup>83</sup>” are seriously mistaken as this sexual addiction will eventually take over the life of the one in its captivity. The addiction becomes more important than important relationships, finances and responsibilities<sup>84</sup>.

Lives are wrecked by its addictive nature and people who are ensnared regret this “harmless pastime” as they have lost everything they held dear to their hearts. As one writer<sup>85</sup> puts it:

***“Sexual addiction has been described as the “athlete’s foot of the mind”. It never goes away. It is always seeking to be scratched, promising relief. To scratch however, is to cause pain and to intensify the itch.”***

## **5. THE FOLLOWING RELEVANT STATISTICS ARE PROVIDED BY 2013 ANNUAL REPORT ON THE COVENANT EYES WEBSITE<sup>86</sup>:**

### **5.1 The Porn industry**

- In 2006, estimated revenues for the sex-related entertainment business were just under \$13 billion in the US. These estimates included video sales and rentals, Internet sales, cable, pay-per-view, phone sex, exotic dance clubs magazines, and novelty stores.
- The porn industry generates \$13 billion each year in the US.
- Internet porn alone is a \$3 Billion per year business.
- 79% of porn performers have used marijuana, and 50% have used ecstasy.
- 88% of scenes in porn films contain acts of physical aggression, and 49% of scenes contain verbal aggression.

---

<sup>83</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 43.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid. p. 44.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid. p.3.

<sup>86</sup> Covenant eyes: (<http://www.covenanteyes.com/pornstats/>)

---

- "66% of porn performers have Herpes, 12-28% has sexually transmitted diseases, and 7% have HIV."

## 5.2 Subscriptions

There are higher percentages of subscriptions to porn sites in zip codes that

- Are more urban than rural.
- Have experienced an increase in higher than average household income.
- Have a great density of young people (age 15-24).
- Have a higher proportion of people with undergraduate degrees.
- Have higher measures of social capital (i.e. more people who donate blood, engage in volunteer activities, or participate in community projects).

## 5.3 Porn in the church:

- 51% of pastors say pornography is a possible temptation
- 50% of all Christian men and 20% of Christian women say they are addicted to pornography
- 75% of pastors do not make themselves accountable to anyone for their internet use
- Regular church attendees are 26% less likely to look at porn, however, self-identified fundamentalists are 91% more likely to look at porn

## 5.4 Porn and teenagers

***"Never before in the history of telecommunications media in the United States has so much indecent (and obscene) material been so easily accessible by so many minors in so many American homes with so few restrictions."***

**- U.S. Department of Justice**

- 9 out of 10 boys were *exposed to pornography* before the age of 18.
- The *first exposure to pornography* among men is *12 years old*.
- 71% of teens *hide online behavior from their parents*.
- 28% of 16-17 year olds have been *unintentionally exposed to porn online*.
- *20% of 16-year-olds* have received a sexually explicit text message (sex) and *30% of 17-year-olds* have received a sex.
- 6 out of 10 girls were *exposed to pornography* before the age of 18.
- 15% of boys and 9% of girls *have seen child pornography*.
- 32% of boys and 18% of girls *have seen bestiality online*.
- 39% of boys and 23% of girls *have seen sexual bondage online*.
- 83% of boys and 57% of girls *have seen group sex online*.
- 69% of boys and 55% of girls *have seen same-sex intercourse online*.

## **5.5 Porn and Young Adults**

- 68% of young adult men and 18% of woman use porn at least once every week
- Another 17% and another 30% of women use porn 1-2 times per month

This means that for 85% of young men and nearly half of young women, watching porn is at least a monthly activity.

- Nearly 1 in 5 of 18-24 year olds have sent a sext (sexually explicit text message)
- 51% of male and 32% of female students first viewed porn before their teenage years (12 and younger)
- 64% of college men and 18% of college women spend time online for internet sex every week
- 67% of young men and 49% of young women say viewing porn is an acceptable way to express ones sexuality

## 5.6 Pornography and the marriage

***"I have also seen in my clinical experience that pornography damages the sexual performance of the viewers. Pornography viewers tend to have problems with premature ejaculation and erectile dysfunction. Having spent so much time in unnatural sexual experiences with paper, celluloid and cyberspace, they seem to find it difficult to have sex with a real human being. Pornography is raising their expectation and demand for types and amounts of sexual experiences; at the same time it is reducing their ability to experience sex."***

**- Dr. MaryAnne Layden**

Healthy Relationships provide:

- Happily married men are *61% less likely to look at porn.*
- Those with teen children are *45% less likely to look at porn.*

However, if you live in an unhappy marriage:

- *68% of divorce cases* involved one party meeting a new lover over the Internet.
- *56% of divorce cases* involved one party having an obsessive interest in pornographic websites.
- *Men are more than 543% more likely* to look at porn than women.
- *70% of wives of sex addicts* could be diagnosed with Post Traumatic Stress Disorder.
- Those who have ever engaged in paid sex are *270% more likely to look at porn.*
- Those who have ever committed adultery are *218% more likely to look at porn.*

On the Covenant Watch website the pornographic searches counter indicating the amount of pornographic searches done worldwide since the beginning of 2013 is a staggering: 1 621 774 757 and growing every second<sup>87</sup>. The following figures gives some important statistics.

---

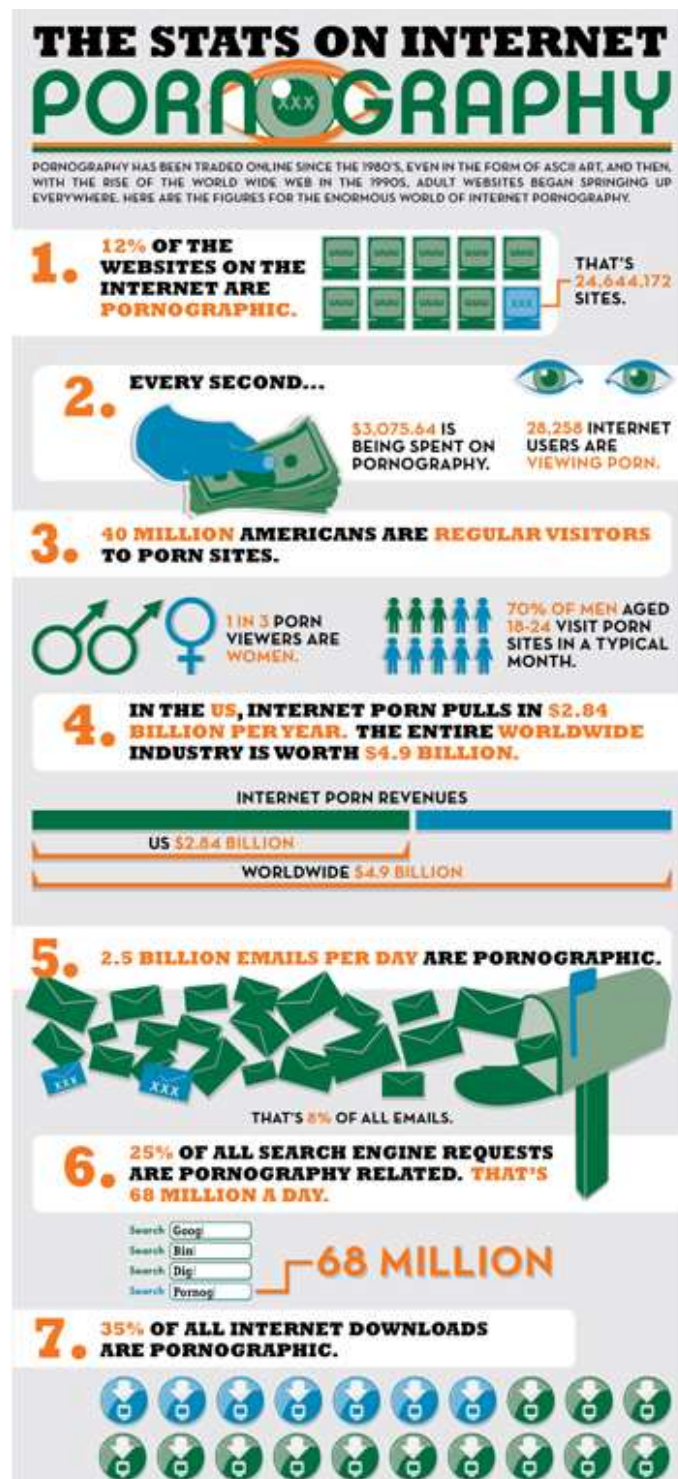
<sup>87</sup> Relevant Magazine (<http://www.relevantmagazine.com/life/whole-life/features/29332-this-is-your-brain-on-porn>) on 22 September 2013

---



*A mental model of sexual addiction pertaining to pornography in explaining the behaviours of  
a pornography addict*

---





**Figure 3.** Statistics on Internet Pornography<sup>88</sup>.

---

<sup>88</sup> Tech addiction: effective help for video game and computer addiction: (<http://www.techaddiction.ca/pornography-addiction-statistics.html>)

---

These results are staggering, especially the statistics about young men and women. These results prove that Satan's agenda to trap human beings in this severe addiction are flourishing. Years before the internet access to pornography was not as wide spread and one had to physically go to an adult store in order to buy pornographic material. Today, even minors can freely access pornography without any restrictions from the internet.

As was seen, the more one is exposed to these pornographic images the more engrained the neurological pathway is developed in the brain. The snare lies therein that individuals viewing pornography does not see the danger that it holds. Satan's attack on the mind in getting mankind entrapped into pornography goes even further. The following section will deal with how pornographers target men and women differently as a result of the differences in the minds' processes between men and women.

## **6. PORNOGRAPHERS TARGET MEN AND WOMEN DIFFERENTLY**

God created men and women differently. The male brain uses the left hemisphere for verbal and the right for visual activities while the female brain use both sides for vision and verbal activities<sup>89</sup>. The key perceptual sense for the male is vision – this is why pornography presents such an attractive feat for men<sup>90</sup>.

The female brain has more connections between the right and left hemisphere while estrogen, the female sex hormone, increases these connections due to its function of building up dendrite connections on each nerve cell thereby increasing the connections between nerve cells<sup>91</sup>.

---

<sup>89</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 73.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid. p. 77.

The male brain has fewer connections between the two hemispheres and testosterone, the male hormone, serves to further narrow the already narrowed male brain (that is, more narrowly focussed brain able to focus narrowly on a single goal with determination and focus until it is accomplished)<sup>92</sup>.

Men and women differ in sexual arousal in that men “see body parts” while women see relationship<sup>93</sup>. The female brain places priority on relationship where the male places it on achievement<sup>94</sup>.

Men have a separate “filing cabinet” for sex totally unrelated to emotion, whereas women do not keep sex in a separate compartment<sup>95</sup>. Men place the relationship with their wives in a totally separate “compartment” than viewing pornography<sup>96</sup>.

While looking at porn the male brain narrows very quickly into the funnel experience and everything else in the “real world” is blocked out completely and in this way hours are lost<sup>97</sup>. Men have explained how they get a sudden “urge” to view porn – they get pulled into the narrow experience very quickly<sup>98</sup>.

They sometimes block out logic and reason and this is sometimes explained by the fact that the male brain recognizes emotion and visual stimuli in the right hemisphere awhile logic and reasoning is situated in the left, and the connections between the two hemispheres are narrow<sup>99</sup>.

---

<sup>92</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 77.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid. p. 82.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid.

<sup>95</sup> Ibid.

<sup>96</sup> Ibid.

<sup>97</sup> Ibid. pp. 84-85.

<sup>98</sup> Ibid. p. 85.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid.

So in the event of looking at porn, the images goes straight into the right hemisphere where arousal and excitement are located – the brain narrowly focuses on the nude images and as a result of the sexual arousal, more testosterone is released further narrowing the brain's focus<sup>100</sup>.

The rational part of the man's brain is over ridden with the emotional part that is sexually aroused at that time. A man gets "pulled into" the funnel experience where women makes a **conscious choice** at their own pace, women do not block everything out. In the women's case, climax is not the goal, but rather if the important elements of intimacy were experienced they would still be satisfied<sup>101</sup>.

The woman is much more aware of her emotions, thoughts and feelings at a much wider perspective<sup>102</sup>. The right setting is very important for a female as in her brain the centres of logic, reason, arousal and emotion are well connected, therefore she would typically not narrow down the funnel unless she has considered the big picture and deems the journey to be in line with her overall values, reasoning and goals<sup>103</sup>.

Pornographers target the male brain **visually**, by changing the "scenery" often and by placing the male in a dominating role. The idea is that men must reach climax so that an addiction is formed and that powerful imprinting of the images in their minds takes place<sup>104</sup>.

A female market is created by focussing on **relationship** such as caring, love communication and tenderness that lead up to the act – showing sex in a more holistic way – like a soap opera model around porn<sup>105</sup>.

---

<sup>100</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 85.

<sup>101</sup> Ibid. pp. 86-87.

<sup>102</sup> Ibid. p. 88.

<sup>103</sup> Ibid. p. 88.

<sup>104</sup> Ibid. p. 92.

<sup>105</sup> Ibid. p. 94.

This is played out in cybersex chat rooms, women feel that they are listened to, cared for and that attention is paid to them, they experience support, acceptance and comfort<sup>106</sup>. Women are desensitized to porn through chat room relationships and may be coaxed into watching porn in a “cyber relationship”<sup>107</sup>.

From these accounts one can see that not only does Satan attack the minds of human beings but he does so, on a very strategic manner as to ensure captivity of his victims into sexual slavery. Up to now it was understood that a dominant mental model can be established through an addiction to pornography, this model is established and affected by endogenous neurochemicals secreted by the brain during the experience making it an “internal addiction”.

Satan has managed to deceive pornography viewers that it only affects them and that it can do no harm. He has also managed to set up different temptations for both men and women to get captivated by his lies. The next section will deal with the mental models or core beliefs within the mind of a pornography addict that led to them exposing themselves to this dangerous addiction.

## **7. CORE BELIEFS AND THE OUTCOMES IN SEXUAL ADDICTION**

Mental models are formed in the early childhood with the child’s parents or primary caregiver that are the source of influence or information as to what a child will believe about themselves, how they will view relationships as well as how they will view the world. In this sense, their minds are like blank sheets that needs to be programmed as to all the “how to’s” in life.

In sexual addiction there is an ***impairment in these core beliefs***. Again, sexual addiction and its results starts in the ***mind***.

---

<sup>106</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 97.

<sup>107</sup> Ibid. p. 98.

Carnes explains these core beliefs as follows: there are four parts of a child's development that ultimately becomes part of the sexual addiction<sup>108</sup>. These are: the self-image (how children perceive themselves), relationships (how children perceive their relationship with others), needs (how children perceive their own needs) and sexuality (how children perceive their own sexual feelings and needs)<sup>109</sup>.

These core beliefs are the **conclusions that govern the choices and behaviours during the child's adult life**<sup>110</sup>. One can see from his summary that these core beliefs touch every part of the life of a child and eventually the adult. If these core beliefs or mental models are established in the wrong way within a child it could seriously affect their outcome in life and set them up for success or failure not only in their life but also in the way that they view their sexuality.

The following examples serve to show how a distorted mental model affects an individual<sup>111</sup>:

- A girl reads the sexually explicit magazines in her father's pornography collection and becomes convinced that that is how to get a man's attention. As an adult, she acts like a woman in those magazines to attract the attention of the opposite sex
- A boy learns about sex looking at women wearing lingerie in department store catalogs. He becomes fixated on lingerie and discovers lingerie Web sites. He also becomes sexually involved with a woman who works for a lingerie company. He is arrested for breaking into people's homes and taking lingerie.
- A girl's mother married four times. One of the girls' stepfathers molested her and her siblings. She approaches her mother about this. Her mother does nothing. At age fifteen she is involved with a "swinging club" of parents.

---

<sup>108</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) *Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction*. Minnesota, US: CompCare Publishers, p. 97.

<sup>109</sup> Ibid.

<sup>110</sup> Ibid.

<sup>111</sup> Ibid. p. 88.

- At the same age she is allowed to have boys stay over overnight. As she grows older and gets married, she has affairs and discloses this to her husband. He acts as if it doesn't matter to him, just like her mom acted toward her.
- A boy has surgery on his testicle. His mother is a nurse and tends to his wounds. On the Internet he discovers sites that feature old women and young boys together. He becomes fixated with "elder erotica".
- A mother pulls her son's pants down in front of her friends to show them his genitals, at which they all laugh and joke. As an adult, he ends up exhibiting himself and being humiliated.
- As punishment, a young girl had to take off her clothes in order to be beaten in front of her siblings. As an adult, she could only achieve an orgasm if a man was hurting her.

In these examples the distortion of the mental model of the child can be seen and the outcome thereof in their later life as an adult. It all starts with a **false belief** that was engrained in their minds as a result of faulty input into their mental models while they were still young. These distortions became integrated into their "arousal template" and determined what would be sexually arousing to them as adults<sup>112</sup>. When sexual addiction happens it is often a result of such a distorted template<sup>113</sup>. One can clearly see the role of how whatever is established in the mind can set one up for sexual addictions or perversions.

## 7.1 Core beliefs of an addict

Sexual addiction (and many other addictions for that matter) may sprout from faulty core beliefs that were established in the mental model of a child. As was seen, these mental models govern everything that a person does, the choices they make, the way they view the world etc.

---

<sup>112</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) *Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction*. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 90.

<sup>113</sup> Ibid.



In the sex addict these core beliefs gives way to propel their addiction towards watching pornography, having cybersex, having extramarital affairs and might even end up in more violent sexual assaults such as rape or molestation.

From the research done by Carnes he concluded: the core issue in the mind of the addict is that they have been **abandoned or were not wanted** as a child. In a loving family there is a deep sense of parents that care for them as opposed to abandonment<sup>114</sup>. It is in this relationship that trust in oneself and in others resides. Loving parents guide, touch, affirm and love their children even when they are struggling with limits and rules as part of growing up. Without this, there is a **lack of human care** in which the individual are **prone to addiction** as they are forced to take care of themselves in self-comforting routines<sup>115</sup>.

Sex can then become a means to “provide” the comfort and nurturing that is needed and in this way there is a blur between sex, nurturing and comforting<sup>116</sup>. In this terrible deception the mind of the individual, he/she believes **to feel secure means to be sexual**<sup>117</sup>. In addition they believe that the rest of the human race thinks the same way that they do<sup>118</sup>. So out of a false belief comes a need that they have to fill for themselves and they do this with sex – and so the addiction starts.

The first core belief of the addict is: **“I am basically a bad, unworthy person”** as abandonment means **being unwanted**<sup>119</sup>. In a child’s mind being unwanted means **being unworthy and bad**<sup>120</sup>. This gives the child a feeling of **worthlessness**. The second core belief stems from the first core belief that the child is a bad person.

---

<sup>114</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 102.

<sup>115</sup> Ibid.

<sup>116</sup> Ibid.

<sup>117</sup> Ibid.

<sup>118</sup> Ibid.

<sup>119</sup> Ibid. p. 99.

<sup>120</sup> Ibid. p. 100.

The child believes that **“no one would love me as I am”**. In this way children grow up believing that no one will accept them unconditionally and that people will not be there, they cannot be trusted or depended on<sup>121</sup>. People who want relationship with them are seen as “wanting something” not just because they care<sup>122</sup>.

In their mind there will always be a price to pay, in the smallest form there will always be something that needs to be overlooked, ignored or denied, **to be close will mean to lose reality or integrity somehow**<sup>123</sup> so **intimacy is avoided**.

The third core belief is **“My needs are never going to be met if I have to depend on others**<sup>124”</sup>. Addicts report feeling lonely, lost and unprotected during childhood, this was not only a lack of nurturing but also the fact that there **was no one to show them how to take care of themselves or keep them from harm**<sup>125</sup>.

This, **not being able to depend on an adult to meet ones’ needs** is a key element in addiction<sup>126</sup>. A search begins in the individuals life for something that is dependable that will make him/her feel better<sup>127</sup>.

Two key elements: **trust and dependency** are what gives a person personal strength and confidence and without these two key elements there is a vulnerability to an enslaving addiction<sup>128</sup>. The individual searching for something dependable is now vulnerable to **all the addictions** that promises comfort every time<sup>129</sup>. This can be found in drugs, food, alcohol or sex which consistently provides the security that these addicts need.

---

<sup>121</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 101.

<sup>122</sup> Ibid.

<sup>123</sup> Ibid.

<sup>124</sup> Ibid. p. 102.

<sup>125</sup> Ibid. p. 101.

<sup>126</sup> Ibid.

<sup>127</sup> Ibid.

<sup>128</sup> Ibid.

<sup>129</sup> Ibid. p. 102.

The final core belief of a sexual addict is then: **sex is my most important need**<sup>130</sup>. Because of these warped core beliefs, the addict will replace human relationships with an addictive relationship with sexuality – **addiction is a relationship in which sexual obsession replaces people**<sup>131</sup>.

If the addict has grown up in an environment where the parents or primary caregivers made any negative comments or connotations to sex, being the child's primary means of comfort, **further complications can occur**<sup>132,133</sup>. Now the child concludes, through the people's opinions that matter the most, that they are unlikable as their means of comfort are wrong or perverse<sup>134</sup>. Now they tend to hide that central part of themselves that others will despise and this adds to loneliness and pain that again creates the need for their comfort mechanism<sup>135</sup>.

In the same way, a family that does not talk about sex will also distort a child's mental model of sex<sup>136</sup>.

Almost all addicts can trace their faulty core belief system back to their childhood<sup>137</sup>. The fundamental self-doubt and distrust of others is a recipe for potential addiction<sup>138</sup>.

This unhealthy core belief system paves the way for impaired thinking that supports the addictive cycle and the resulting unmanageability and powerlessness confirm and deepen the core beliefs<sup>139</sup>.

---

<sup>130</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 102.

<sup>131</sup> Ibid.

<sup>132</sup> Ibid.

<sup>133</sup> Ibid. p. 88.

<sup>134</sup> Ibid. p. 102.

<sup>135</sup> Ibid. p. 103.

<sup>136</sup> Ibid. p. 88.

<sup>137</sup> Ibid. p. 103.

<sup>138</sup> Ibid. p. 108.

<sup>139</sup> Ibid.

These **core beliefs are central to the addict's world as an adult**. The faulty core beliefs are what holds the secret internal world of the addict intact and serves to contribute to the disconnection between the interior world the addict experiences, with its pain and shame, and the exterior image that the addict projects to keep the interior world safe<sup>140</sup>.

A summary of the internal and external worlds of an addict is summarized in Appendix A of this chapter<sup>141</sup>.

One can see from the evidence provided that if a child were to be abused sexually by a parent (or any other adult for that matter) that their mental models will be severely distorted and will have lasting effects that the child will take with them into their adult years. **During sexual abuse the fusion between sex and nurturing is cemented in the child's mind**<sup>142</sup> the same way when wrong belief models are established.

In the mind of a child the parents or primary caregivers “model” relationships to them – if these relationships are built on a foundation of sex (as in the case of sexual abuse), the child will always have difficulty separating sex and relationships<sup>143</sup>. This is many times the primary reason for sexual addiction in adults.

From his research one can clearly see the importance of the mind in developing these core beliefs. Satan knows that if he can interfere with the mental models during the early development of a child, he will set the child up for a lifetime of pain, suffering and failure. The individual will also be prone to sin, and sin in ways that God clearly forbid in His Word in order to keep His children safe from destruction.

---

<sup>140</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 108.

<sup>141</sup> Ibid. pp. 108-116.

<sup>142</sup> Ibid. p. 103.

<sup>143</sup> Ibid.

As was seen these core beliefs are formed in the early childhood and the role that the family, especially the mother and the father plays during the early development years of the child is extremely important in the establishing of healthy and correct mental models.

## 8. THE FAMILY AND MENTAL MODELS

There seems to be a trend in the passing of sexual addiction from one generation to the next<sup>144</sup>. These family bloodlines of sexual abuse and sexual addiction are many times seen in sexual addicts that undergo treatment. In fact, treatment programs almost always involve the family unit as part of the process.

As was seen, the common theme throughout addiction is the **fear of abandonment**<sup>145</sup>. The feeling of not being “wanted” is especially powerful in sexual addiction. Cases of exhibitionism has been related to isolation and feelings of “being alone” after parents abandoned a child<sup>146</sup>. The **mother plays an extremely important role** in this regard. The mother literally holds the power of life and death over her infant in that if she leaves her child he will be exposed to death itself. In this way even the thread of abandonment has power over a young child and sexual addiction derives its power from this fundamental concern for survival<sup>147</sup>. In this regard, emotional abandonment is terrifying to a young child<sup>148</sup>.

***“Children experience panic at the thought of the loss of or withdrawal of a parent’s approval. It is even more intense than the fear of death. It is the experience of losing their existence...as if they had never existed at all. This is referred to as annihilation anxiety.”***

---

<sup>144</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 97.

<sup>145</sup> Ibid. p. 99.

<sup>146</sup> Ibid.

<sup>147</sup> Ibid.

<sup>148</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction .USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 67.

---

If the enemy can establish a break in connection or confidence between mother and child he has won. This research shows that abandonment for a child is much worse than even **death itself**. One of the most wonderful verses of Scripture in the Word of God is that God promises in His Word that He will never leave or forsake His children:

***...for He [God] Himself has said, I will not in any way fail you nor give you up nor leave you without support. [I will] not,<sup>1</sup> [I will] not, [I will] not in any degree leave you helpless nor forsake nor let [you] down (relax My hold on you) [Assuredly not!]***

***Hebrews 13:5***

One can find rest and peace in this promise, God, as being the Perfect Father will never leave His children to fend for themselves therefore the fear of abandonment is nullified through His promise. As a result of faulty core beliefs the sexual addict runs the danger of becoming trapped in the **addiction cycle** which is the premise of the next discussion. Again, the sexual addiction cycle is a result of impaired core beliefs as will be seen.

## **9. THE SEXUAL ADDICTION CYCLE**

As a result of **impaired thinking processes** the sexual addict might enter the addiction cycle. In his book Carnes describes the addictive cycle for sex addicts in four stages<sup>149</sup>:

### **9.1 Preoccupation:**

The trance or mood wherein the addicts' minds are completely engrossed with the thoughts of sex. This mental state creates an obsessive search for sexual stimulation.

---

<sup>149</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, pp. 19-20.

---

Normal everyday routines are viewed through a sexually obsessive filter. Isolation in this stage becomes real as the addict is preoccupied with their sexual addiction and real life relationships are neglected<sup>150</sup>.

## **9.2 Ritualization:**

The addict's own special routines that lead up to the sexual behavior. The ritual intensifies the preoccupation, adding arousal and excitement.

## **9.3 Compulsive sexual behavior:**

The actual sexual act, which is the end goal of the first two steps. ***Sexual addicts are unable to control or stop this behavior.***

## **9.4 Despair:**

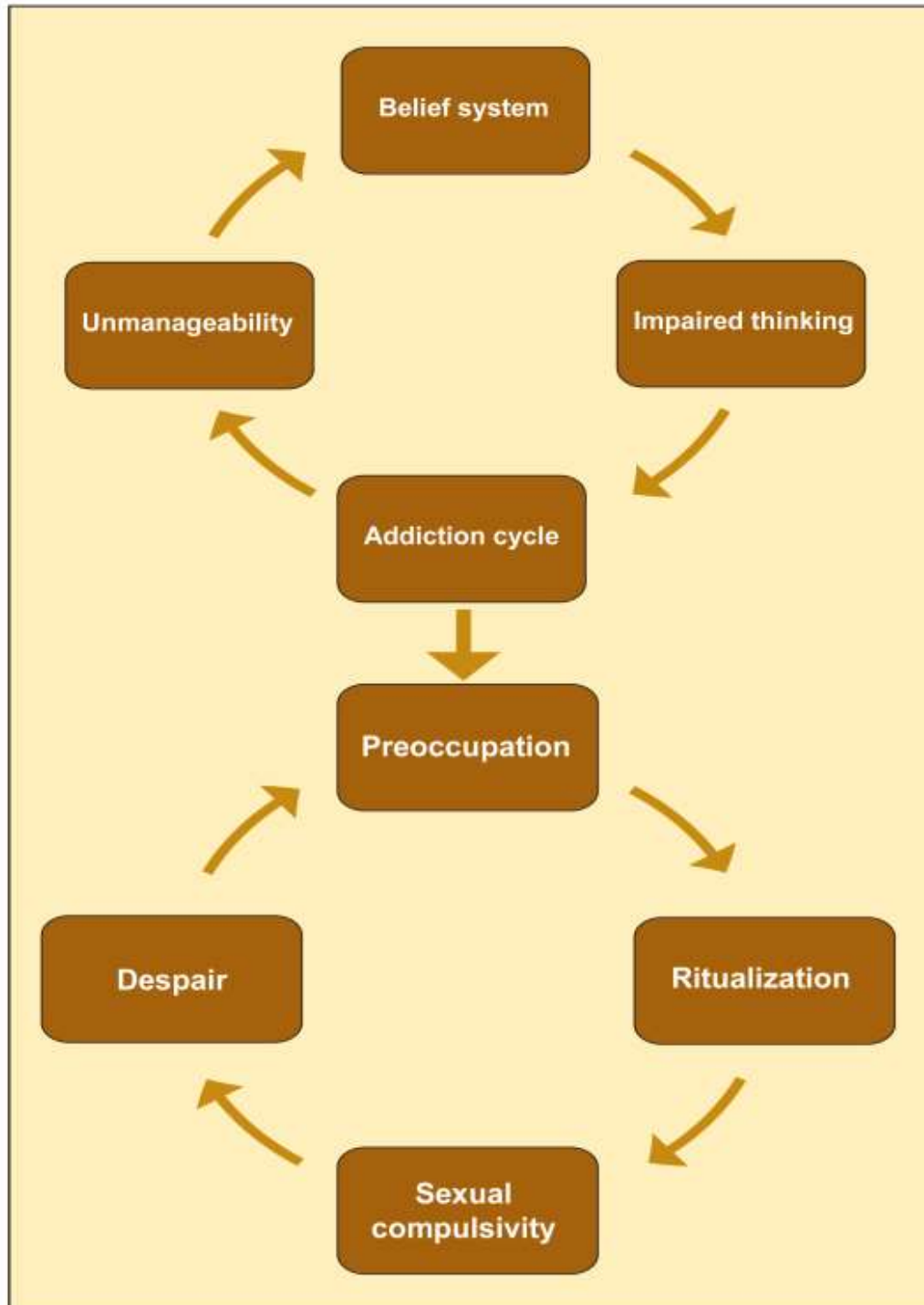
The feeling of utter hopelessness addicts have about their behavior and their powerlessness.

---

<sup>150</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 21.

---

It is schematically illustrated as follows:



**Figure 4.** The Addictive System.

---



The cycle starts at the top with a wrong belief system that results in impaired thinking. As a result the addiction cycle starts<sup>151</sup>. The addiction cycle results in unmanageability as the addict becomes so trapped in his or her own world that their life becomes unmanageable in that no commitments are kept, relationships are neglected etc.<sup>152</sup>.

The most important consequence of the addictive system is that the addict becomes more and more isolated from reality in such a way that all his or her relationships are severed<sup>153</sup>. This means that the addict now lives a double life. A public life and a secret life from which he cannot escape and that no one knows about<sup>154</sup>. The secret life is many times discovered as the consequences of the addicts behaviour catches up with them – the have unmet commitments, lies that are exposed, relationships that are sacrificed, finances that are affected etc. as well as the inability of the addict to manage their life<sup>155</sup>.

In addition, the addicts' impaired mental processes gives way to **faulty problem solving** that results in decisions made that further plunges the addict into trouble<sup>156</sup>. This further intensifies the addicts' **isolation** – normal, close relationships are neglected and the isolation results in addicts **losing touch with their own selves** and so the addicts' world has totally become insulated from real life<sup>157</sup>.

In this way the addict moves from healthy relationships to sexual compulsion and the addiction cycle continues and soon within the **addictive cycle sexual experience becomes the reason for being**, the primary relationship for the addict<sup>158</sup>.

---

<sup>151</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, pp.25-26.

<sup>152</sup> Ibid.

<sup>153</sup> Ibid., p.23.

<sup>154</sup> Ibid.

<sup>155</sup> Ibid.

<sup>156</sup> Ibid. p. 24.

<sup>157</sup> Ibid. p. 25.

<sup>158</sup> Ibid. pp.25-26.

The whole cycle of sexual addiction begins with a faulty belief system. Carnes goes on to explain<sup>159</sup>:

***“The addictive system starts with a belief system containing faulty assumptions, myths, and values that support impaired thinking. The resulting delusional thought processes insulate the addiction cycle from reality. The four phase addiction cycle (preoccupation, ritualization, sexual compulsiveness, and despair) can repeat itself unhindered and take over the addicts life. All the other support systems, including relationships, work, finance, and health, become unmanageable. The negative consequences from the unmanageability confirm the faulty beliefs, which hold that the addict is a bad person who is unlovable. In turn, revalidated beliefs allow further distortion of reality.”***

According to Carnes the delusional thought patterns and core belief system may **support more than one addiction**. Other addictions, such as overeating, alcohol or drug addiction, are many times found to reinforce a sexual addiction<sup>160</sup>. These addictions seem to reinforce the sexual addiction: a sexual addiction might start as a result of a faulty belief system that people are not attracted to the individual; the sexual addiction is then rooted in the fear of rejection, then the individual would eat compulsively to kill the pain of due to the fear of rejection, or the addict might overeat to avoid the depression after acting out their sexual addiction<sup>161</sup>.

In this way the two processes become interdependent<sup>162</sup>. The same goes for alcohol or drug addiction, it is many times done to cover the pain caused by a sexual addiction<sup>163</sup>.

---

<sup>159</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, pp. 25-26.

<sup>160</sup> Ibid. p. 29.

<sup>161</sup> Ibid.

<sup>162</sup> Ibid.

<sup>163</sup> Ibid. p. 30.

It is a known fact that many **“emotional illnesses”** are concomitant with sexual addiction such as: depression, bipolar disorders, suicide, obsessive-compulsive behaviour and post-traumatic stress disorder<sup>164</sup>. Because the sexual addiction sometimes goes unacknowledged, many of these addicts are treated for their **mental diseases instead of treating the root cause responsible for the mental illness: the sexual addiction**<sup>165</sup>. Sexual addiction can be deadly in that suicide is the highest emotional risk that accompanies this addiction and up to 72 percent of all sexual addicts have thought about committing suicide<sup>166</sup>.

Sex is what makes the isolation of the addict bearable, and in this lies a great danger: sex (as in any other addiction) always does what it promises – for the moment<sup>167</sup>. In this way the in sexual addiction **the relationship is with sex** and not people as they are able to find the stability and emotional security in their addiction<sup>168</sup>. Sexual addiction not only involves pornography but a myriad of other sexual behaviours.

**Carnes divides sexual addictions into one of three categories**<sup>169</sup>:

**Table 1.** Carnes divides sexual addictions into one of three categories

Level one	Masturbation, compulsive relationships, centrefolds, pornography, strip shows, prostitution, anonymous sex,
Level two	Exhibitionism, Voyeurism, indecent calls and liberties
Level three	Child molesting and incest, Rape and violence,

---

<sup>164</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 30.

<sup>165</sup> Ibid.

<sup>166</sup> Ibid.

<sup>167</sup> Ibid. p. 16.

<sup>168</sup> Ibid.

<sup>169</sup> Ibid. p. 65.

These levels reveal some behaviours that are included in sexual addiction, of which many others also exist (bestiality, sadomasochism etc.)<sup>170</sup>. These different levels simply serve to help understand sexually compulsive behaviour. With these levels it is important to keep the following in mind: all addicts experience very real pain no matter what level they are in, the addicts are lonely, full of shame and despair<sup>171</sup>.

It is interesting to note that sexual behaviours on different levels reinforce one another and that sexual addictive behaviours is reinforced with other compulsive addictions like overeating, working, drinking, drug abuse etc.<sup>172</sup>. In this way **addiction is a system** where behaviour is interdependent<sup>173</sup>. It is summarized as follows:

“There are constantly shifting patterns that weave together the various levels of sexually compulsive behaviour and that may include other addictions and emotional disorders<sup>174</sup>. The system operates on a repetitive rhythm. **The driving force for each cycle comes from a faulty belief system translated through delusional thought patterns**<sup>175</sup>. In general, systems are self-perpetuating, and the sexual addiction as a system is just that. The completion of each cycle confirms that belief system a new and stronger cycle is born. The behaviour, then, becomes intensified within Level One, and sometimes extends to Levels Two and Three<sup>176</sup>.”

Sexual addicts, although their behaviour is sometimes compulsive, feels the pain and consequences as a result of personal emptiness<sup>177</sup>. They wrestle daily with the fear of their compulsivity being discovered<sup>178</sup>.

---

<sup>170</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 65.

<sup>171</sup> Ibid. p. 68.

<sup>172</sup> Ibid. pp. 73-74.

<sup>173</sup> Ibid. p. 74.

<sup>174</sup> Ibid.

<sup>175</sup> Ibid.

<sup>176</sup> Ibid. pp. 74-75.

<sup>177</sup> Ibid. p. 34.

**Porn** is a convenient and anonymous way to **escape and to self-medicate**, the more it is used the more dependent the person becomes<sup>179</sup>. The person may become distant, ignore his spouse, become cold during sexual encounters with his spouse, make extreme demands during sexual intimacy, become tolerant towards sexualized media etc. Kastleman goes on to explain<sup>180</sup>:

**“Pornographic images are stored in the emotional centres of the brain, where they can be called up at any time, place or situation. Because there are so many vast and diverse links in the pornography mental model, there is no telling what outward or inward stimulus will activate these images.**

**The porn user can be with family, at work, in church, in the grocery store, playing with his children etc. and suddenly a pornographic image enters upon the stage of his mind.**

**This can lead to one of many responses: frustration or anger, where his mood turns him irritable and grumpy, lust and arousal, plunging him into a mental fantasy session, making it difficult to focus on the people or task at hand, an overwhelming urge to look at pornography, which he immediately begins formulating a plan to do, causing him to neglect or abandon present people and obligations; and, the worst of all, the sudden flood of pornographic images can plunge him into the narrow part of the funnel, where he seeks to act out his fantasies with or against other via prostitution, affairs, exhibitionism, voyeurism, molestation, or rape.”**

---

<sup>178</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 34.

<sup>179</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) The Drug Of The New Millenium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 63.

<sup>180</sup> Ibid. pp. 66-67.

As a result the relationships of a sexual addict suffer greatly as his or her relationship with sex becomes more and more prominent. In compulsive relationships, if the spouse feels victimized by the other's sexuality – discounting the partners' feelings, the addict trades relationship for sexual needs<sup>181</sup>. The addict makes the other person an obsession<sup>182</sup>.

From these distorted mental models come distorted views **of reality**<sup>183</sup>. As a result, an addict will **deny** their problem or **shift the blame** (the same way that Adam and Eve did) towards someone, something else or their circumstances or **minimize their problem**<sup>184</sup>. In this way the addict **stays trapped** in their situation as they justify their behaviour. Some of the most clever excuses/justifications for their behaviour will be given<sup>185</sup>.

- If I don't have it every few days, the pressure builds up
- I am oversexed and I need to meet my needs
- What she/he doesn't know won't hurt
- My husband/wife is not sensitive to my needs
- If only my wife would be more responsive
- Men are like animals: males are more sexual than females
- Cybersex is just electron's; it's not real
- With the stress I am under, I deserve it
- **It doesn't hurt anyone else**<sup>186</sup>
- The Internet helps broaden my sexual horizons
- No one really cares
- It's my way of relaxing
- Internet chat rooms didn't hurt anybody, it's just a game

---

<sup>181</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 40.

<sup>182</sup> Ibid.

<sup>183</sup> Ibid.

<sup>184</sup> Ibid.

<sup>185</sup> Ibid. p. 17.

<sup>186</sup> Rosenstock-Huessy Eugene, Evans Coleen Townsend (2006) USA: Bordon Books. p. 165.

---

From these justifications for their behaviour one can clearly see the level of deception that has taken hold of a sound mind given by God (according to 2 Timothy 1:7<sup>187</sup>) and these serve to only cut the addict off from the reality of his/her behaviour<sup>188</sup>. In fact, the addicts **thinking process is so impaired** that they often make promises with the most sincerest of intentions, but they never follow through – this is called **sincere delusion**<sup>189</sup> and means one is believing ones' own lies<sup>190</sup>. This again illicit how important the mind is in the addiction pattern, not only is impaired thinking responsible for the delusions but also **serves to keep the addict trapped in his or her addiction**. The Word of God once again has a simple solution for this type of problem:

***“Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.”***

***James 5:16***

Satan loves to keep things hidden or secret, away from the Light of the Word of God (John 1:1). In this way, addicts are kept captive in their sin, unable to break free.

Carnes states that addicts know that they are not trustworthy and live a life of isolation as they do not believe most people can be trusted and that there **would be no forgiveness** should anyone find out about their secret addiction<sup>191</sup>. Both these impaired thinking patterns results in the addict remaining in isolation as well as fear of being discovered. The Word of God, however, is clear on the matter of forgiveness:

***“If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”***

***1 John 1:9***

---

<sup>187</sup> 2 Timothy 1:7: “For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.”

<sup>188</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 18.

<sup>189</sup> Ibid.

<sup>190</sup> Ibid.

<sup>191</sup> Ibid.

God is faithful to forgive our trespasses against Him, He is also willing to restore and justify us through the work on the Cross of Jesus Christ. The lie that there would be no forgiveness from God must therefore be replaced with the truth of His Word that He always forgives our sin.

In addition, because an addict knows that he is not trustworthy, as his addiction has previously taught him/her, his sense of alienation further increases as suspicion and paranoia of being discovered increases<sup>192</sup>.

Blame shifting is a way in which the addict does not take responsibility for his/her actions and in this way lives as a “victim” in his/her own world that deserves a reward<sup>193</sup>.

All of these are delusional thought processes (denial, rationalization, sincere delusion, paranoia and blame<sup>194</sup>) that protect the addiction of the person and keeps him/her isolated in a world in which they cannot be discovered or helped.

A **fundamental deception** empowering repeated sexual behaviour is that sexual addicts believe that **their inappropriate sexual behaviour does not adversely affect other relationships**, this [they believe] is true even for marriage<sup>195</sup>. In reality, the sexual addiction, does not only affect the marital relationship, [the addiction, like many others], eventually affects every relationship that they find themselves in.

Addictive behaviour is more often than not embedded in a **complex web of family relationships**<sup>196</sup>. In this sense, all the family relationships acts as an **interdependent system** that all coincide together to form one function<sup>197</sup>.

---

<sup>192</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 18.

<sup>193</sup> Ibid.

<sup>194</sup> Ibid. p. 19.

<sup>195</sup> Ibid. p. 4.

<sup>196</sup> Ibid.

<sup>197</sup> Ibid.



All relationships in a family unit affect one another – nothing happens in isolation in the system<sup>198</sup>, in this sense, the addiction is much more than an individual and their problem, it entails more than one individual in the family or family tree, **it never involves just the individual themselves**. During counselling the family system needs to be examined as a whole. The role of the **previous generations** in the particular addiction needs to be explored and discovered during counselling.

This is important as the addict many times believe that they are the only ones with the sexual compulsivity (adding to their shame) where it is usually true that the parents or other family members of the addicts, with the same compulsive behaviour, many times even created that void or empty environment for the addict while growing up that resulted in the addicts' addiction<sup>199</sup>. Many times this is a result of the parents or other family members receiving the same treatment from their parents and so the addictive cycle continues from generation to generation<sup>200</sup>.

**Patterns of compulsion are learned**, especially in the early years of life, in the form of abuse, seduction or by witnessing the compulsion of others<sup>201</sup>. This witnessing of compulsion in others creates vulnerability to addiction<sup>202</sup> as this influences the mental model of the child to later behave in the same way.

Carnes makes the important point that the addict, as well as his spouse, absolutely needs to know if there were affairs or prostitutes or compulsive acting out in the preceding generations<sup>203</sup>. As part of the recovery program Carnes includes the family unit as part of the therapy system as it is recognized that the more family members involved the higher the recovery rate<sup>204</sup>.

---

<sup>198</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 5.

<sup>199</sup> Ibid. p. 107.

<sup>200</sup> Ibid.

<sup>201</sup> Ibid. p. 5.

<sup>202</sup> Ibid.

<sup>203</sup> Ibid. p. 103.

<sup>204</sup> Ibid. p. 95.

This point stresses the involvement of the family in creating the sexual addiction pattern as it is a common that parents would recreate the same addictive system for their children because of their own shame<sup>205</sup>.

## 10. THE ROLE OF ABUSE AND BLOODLINES

Many times if an individual was molested as a child there was an interruption in their development while growing up<sup>206</sup>. They re-enact what was done to them and many times there is a part in the addict that is not any older than the victim they are abusing<sup>207</sup>.

**Abuse** is regarded as a main factor responsible for the transmission of **sexual compulsivity** from one generation to the next<sup>208</sup>.

A child learns from a parent how to have relationship, so that when incest takes place a child learns to think of relationships in a sexual way i.e. in order to have relationship one needs to be sexual<sup>209</sup>. This pattern can be transmitted from parent to children for many generations as was stated.

The family system<sup>210</sup>:

- Sustain unity
- Establishes distance between members
- Allows individual uniqueness
- Produces organized effort

---

<sup>205</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 40.

<sup>206</sup> Ibid. p. 58.

<sup>207</sup> Ibid.

<sup>208</sup> Ibid. p. 59.

<sup>209</sup> Ibid.

<sup>210</sup> Ibid. p. 91-92.

The family web in sexual addiction can become extremely complicated as sometimes the first instinct of the family members is to deny the events, such as sexual molestation of child, as it may cause shame and dishonour upon the family<sup>211</sup>. The root of sexual addiction may span over generations and each individual is to take responsibility for their own involvement in such addictions or behaviours<sup>212</sup>.

Another way in which the family or close relatives, such as a spouse, are involved in addictive behaviour is their **futile efforts** to stop the addict from living out his/her addiction.

It is **not in their power to stop the addiction** even though they might think so and they might try everything to stop or prevent the addictive behaviour from occurring<sup>213</sup>. In fact, trying to control the spouses' addictive behaviour **intensifies the addiction process**<sup>214</sup>.

## 11. CO ADDICTION

The loved ones of an addict can go through a grieving stage the same as someone who has lost a child when the results of addiction send the addict to prison<sup>215</sup>.

The normal grieving process in separation involves hope, denial, anger, despair and loneliness, wherein the "normal" individual will eventually accept the loss and reconnect with others<sup>216</sup>.

---

<sup>211</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 96.

<sup>212</sup> Ibid. p. 97.

<sup>213</sup> Ibid. p. 5.

<sup>214</sup> Ibid.

<sup>215</sup> Ibid. p. 119.

<sup>216</sup> Ibid.

In the case of an addict, the relationship is lost even though the person might still be present in the individuals life, and the therefore sometimes stay in the early stages of the grieving process and never gets resolution<sup>217</sup>.

In this way, a person close to the addict may become “stuck” and so involved with the addict that they share in the same mental impairment thinking processes as the addict<sup>218</sup>.

This is called co-addiction. The co-addict will go to extreme lengths, even compromising their own values, to protect the exterior world of the addict, in this way they become part of the problem<sup>219</sup>.

The reality is that co-addicts often behave in a way that adds to the addiction by changing their own identity and ignoring the hurt and wrong things done by the addict.

---

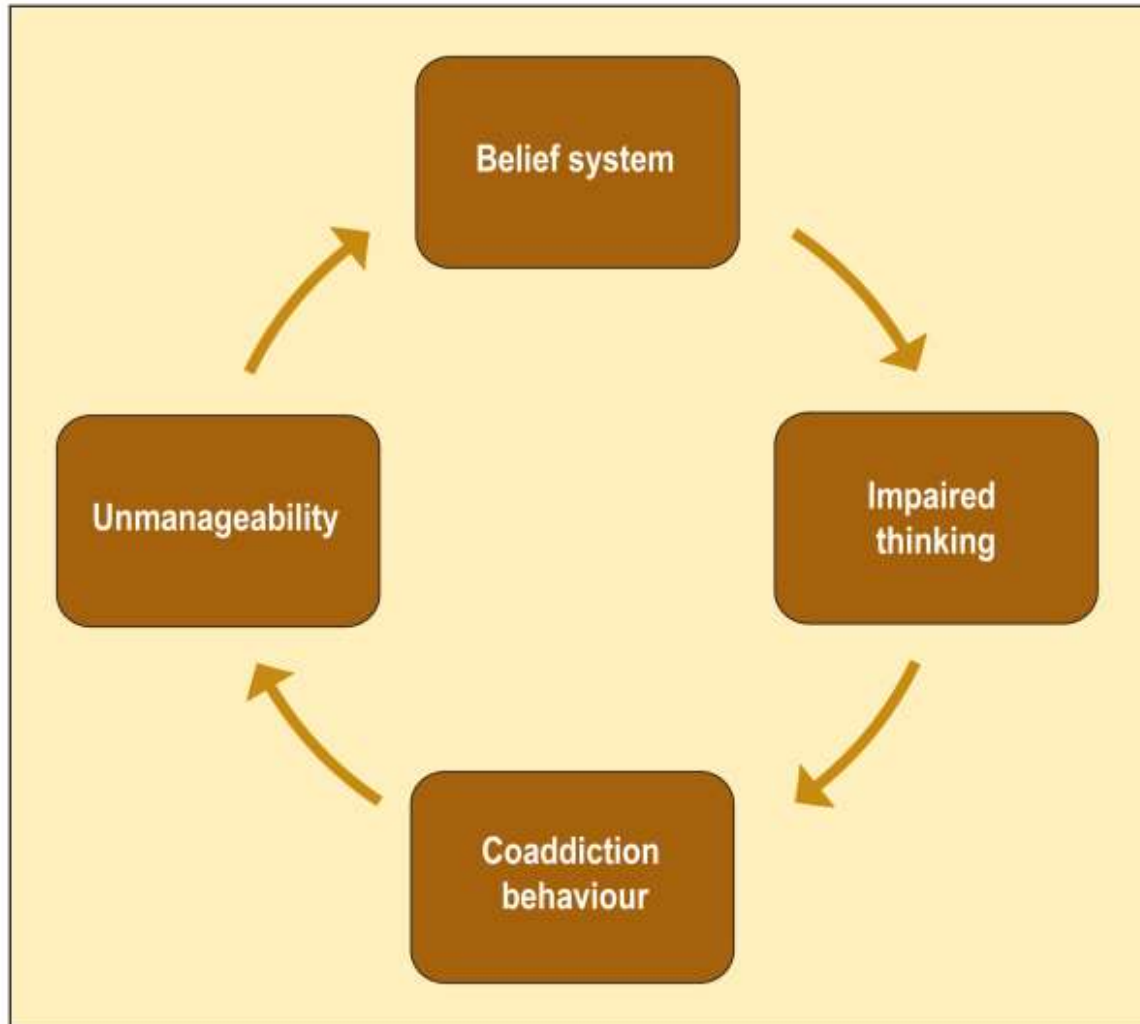
<sup>217</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 119.

<sup>218</sup> Ibid.

<sup>219</sup> Ibid. p. 120.

---

The cycle for the co-addict looks the same as for the addict:



**Figure 5.** The Coaddictive system

Once again the **belief system** that the co-addict holds is the key and many times the fear of abandonment also resides with the co-addict, the same way it does with the addict<sup>220</sup>.

---

<sup>220</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 124.

---

Cultural and family messages are what the child holds to be true<sup>221</sup>. Since the co-addicts cycle is also based on their core belief system, impaired thinking results: denial (dismissing ones' own intuitions), rationalization, grandiosity and inadequacy (because they feel inadequate they feel responsible for the addicts actions), blame and judgement – all of these shields the co-addicts feelings of fear, hopelessness and inadequacy<sup>222</sup>. Basically the co-addict distorts reality in order to preserve the relationship<sup>223</sup>.

A detailed description of the interior and exterior world of the co-addicts can be found in Appendix B<sup>224</sup>.

In this way, one can clearly see that not only is the addict influenced by the attack of their minds but also the family and every other close relationship that the addict finds themselves in. In Coaddictive behaviour the co-addicts enters the same vicious cycle as the addict in order to protect and preserve the outside world of the addict. In this way all the relationships that are interrelated in this web come under the control of the one who intended to destroy them, Satan and his entourage.

They are no longer free and cannot help themselves without the Power of the Holy Spirit and the Word of God to replace the impaired thinking processes. From all the evidence discussed one can see that the problem of sexual addiction begins in the mind and in false beliefs that were established during the early years of life. Satan uses this to entrap the person into slavery of addiction as well as influences the entire family system across generations.

The next section will deal with cybersex as an open doorway into peoples' lives where the enemy can steal, kill and destroy (John 10:10).

---

<sup>221</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 124.

<sup>222</sup> Ibid.

<sup>223</sup> Ibid. p. 125.

<sup>224</sup> Ibid. pp.142-146.

## 12. CYBERSEX

One of Satan's tools to place people in bondage using sexual addiction comes in the form of cybersex. Merriam Webster's Dictionary defines cybersex as the following<sup>225</sup>:

- ***“activity in which people become sexually excited by sending messages about sex to each other over the internet.***
- ***online sex-orientated conversations and exchanges***
- ***sex-oriented material available on a computer”***

This is extremely effective in placing people under bondage as the “advantages” of cybersex include: cybersex is anonymous, it is easily accessible and an endless variety<sup>226</sup>. These addicts are under the impression that the sex that they are having is not real and what they are doing is akin to playing a computer game<sup>227</sup>. They do not see it as adultery as they are not “with someone” but are engaging with something that is not real or is virtual, in their minds they are not hurting anyone including themselves<sup>228</sup>.

In this way they view cybersex as something that does not have consequences and that they can stop whenever they want<sup>229</sup>. ***Only cybersex is not a fantasy***<sup>230</sup> and the Bible clearly states that if a man so much as looks upon a woman with lust it is sin (Matthew 5:25-26). Individuals living under the illusion that no one else gets harmed, especially themselves are prey to the enemy as they will quickly become captives of his snare. This is especially true for women as will be seen.

---

<sup>225</sup> Cybersex. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/cybersex>)

<sup>226</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 81.

<sup>227</sup> Ibid.

<sup>228</sup> Ibid.

<sup>229</sup> Ibid.

<sup>230</sup> Ibid.

A frightening statistic by Al Cooper indicates that 40 percent of all extreme cybersex users are women<sup>231</sup>. This is easily understood if one considers that women who use cybersex as an escape ignore their normal inhibitions that keep them safe<sup>232</sup>.

These women frequently eventually meet with their internet “lovers” placing themselves in dangerous positions with men they do not know and beatings or even murder could be the result of a an internet sexual relationship<sup>233</sup>. Women who are sexual addicts also run the risk of getting pregnant or being the victim of violent behaviour<sup>234</sup>.

Cybersex results in several severe consequences: it involves rapid escalation of the amount and variety of sex, it becomes obsessional with new behaviours becoming quickly fixated, it results in significant relational regression, it accelerates already addictive behaviour and it can result in offline sex addiction<sup>235</sup>.

The computer and internet becomes **sexualized** in that the sound of the modem or even someone typing on a keyboard may become eroticized<sup>236</sup>. The **gateway** to all these consequences of sexual addiction on the internet is **a distortion of reality**<sup>237</sup>. This is one of the key signs of an addictive disorder<sup>238</sup> and reality becomes distorted as a result of beliefs about cybersex and all of its intrigues.

From all of these consequences that follow an addiction to cybersex, it can be seen that the trap of cybersex extends its tentacles into every aspect of ones’ life. Reality even becomes distorted in that the brain will relate everything to this – now dominant – mental model in the mind.

---

<sup>231</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 83.

<sup>232</sup> Ibid.

<sup>233</sup> Ibid.

<sup>234</sup> Ibid. p. 72.

<sup>235</sup> Ibid. p. 84-87.

<sup>236</sup> Ibid. p. 86.

<sup>237</sup> Ibid. p. 83.

<sup>238</sup> Ibid. p. 84.



Women are especially susceptible to cybersex as the focus in cybersex is more **relationship** than it is visual stimulation as is the case in pornography<sup>239</sup>. Women will rather spend hours having cybersex than to risk going out and having real relationships, as they believe it poses no physical risk to them<sup>240</sup>. Carnes makes a good point:

***“Sexual activity on the internet has fundamentally altered our sexuality<sup>241</sup>.”***

This perverse way of “having sex” is totally in contrast that God intended for it to be. Cybersex leads women to **adopt a more male like funnel of intimacy**<sup>242</sup>. The female brain lowers a woman’s defences to explicit images and they begin to focus narrowly on sexual fantasy, sexual encounters and porn to reach climax<sup>243</sup>. In this way the female brain may become “short circuited” and adopt a more male mind set – obtaining a more narrow mind set<sup>244</sup>. In this way she becomes trapped, her brain adapts, and she becomes a victim of the “innocent” sin of internet sex.

Many times women get sucked in by being curious about internet sex or pornography<sup>245</sup>. A woman who Kastleman interviewed tells her story<sup>246</sup>:

***“My first contact with the Internet is an experience that I will never forget. I was curious about how far a person would go to expose their body for all the world to see so I got on a pornography site...the more I saw the more I wanted to see.***

---

<sup>239</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) *Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction*. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 84-87.

<sup>240</sup> Ibid.

<sup>241</sup> Ibid. p. xiii.

<sup>242</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 98.

<sup>243</sup> Ibid.

<sup>244</sup> Ibid.

<sup>245</sup> Ibid. p. 101.

<sup>246</sup> Ibid. pp. 101-102.

***I found myself looking for time when no one was around so I could get on the Internet. I began having sexual fantasies about what I saw there (sometimes involving masturbation). Before long I realized that I didn't want to just imagine sex with a partner, I wanted to physically have sex with someone. One day I got bold enough to find a person online and we arranged to meet for the sole purpose of having sex. I didn't know this person. I had never met him before in my life and that is the way I wanted it. For six months I forgot what life was. All I wanted to do was love for myself and fulfil my selfish physical desires.***

***My circle of friends changed. I now wanted to hang around the people who wanted a life such as mine. I began going to bars. I didn't drink or smoke, but I went there to socialize with the kind of people that I could take home and have a one night stand with...My life was one of sex and gratification, and all because of the curiosity about porn sites. I know of many women who have fallen in the same trap that I did for one reason or another. It's a slow, subtle process that takes you on a trip to hell. I was addicted to sex, fantasies, physical desire, and I didn't even know it until it was too late. The detrimental effect that those six months had on me are too great to mention in detail, but I can tell you the worst of them. My family was nearly destroyed.***

***My children have lost their respect for their mother. Somewhere along the way I contracted Chlamydia, a seriously sexually transmitted disease. But worst of all, I lost respect for myself, and it took a lot of time to get my life back. Internet pornography is world of subtlety. It is the first lurid step in a long staircase that leads both men and women into a life of misery. My initial curiosity with Internet porn led me to the chat rooms, which in turn led me to actual face-to-face sexual encounters. Chat rooms had a much more powerful attraction to me than the pornography itself.***

***I spent many hundreds of hours in sexually graphic conversations with men in cybersex chat rooms. The Internet porn was simply a convenient tool that aided in my romantic/sexual fantasizing.”***

As a result this woman is divorced and her children ignore her, relationships ruined<sup>247</sup>. Her life was destroyed as a result of being curious about internet sex. She lost her marriage and children as a result of the alluring trap of the enemy.

Pornography has many devastating effects: women are objectified and degraded<sup>248</sup>, porn entices men to commit violence against women<sup>249</sup>, internet porn destroys healthy sexual intimacy<sup>250</sup>, it destroys the relationship between husband and wife as the wife cannot measure up to the porn stars on the internet, similarly the husband cannot measure up to the cybersex lover on the internet<sup>251</sup>, it destroys children<sup>252</sup>, it promotes incest (by watching “teen porn”)<sup>253</sup>. These are just some of the ramifications of cybersex and pornography. Sexually transmitted diseases as a result of “meeting ones internet lover” is also a critical consequence of pornography and cybersex. Again, one can see the total destruction as the enemy of God intends for it to be.

The internet induces a ***trancelike state*** in which an individual loses track of time and reality, while on the internet processes of preoccupation and ritualization are engaged<sup>254</sup>. Preoccupation and ritualization distort judgement in such a way that it transcends logic and they “find themselves doing things they never imagined<sup>255</sup>”.

---

<sup>247</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 103.

<sup>248</sup> Ibid. p. 117.

<sup>249</sup> Ibid. p. 119.

<sup>250</sup> Ibid. p. 122.

<sup>251</sup> Ibid. p. 123.

<sup>252</sup> Ibid. p. 124

<sup>253</sup> Ibid. p. 125

<sup>254</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) *Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction.* Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 82.

<sup>255</sup> Ibid.

In this way, many tragic events have taken place like a father who, after months of viewing teen pornography, will after seeing his daughter in her room descend down the narrow funnel so quickly as a result of his dominant mental model that he will lust or may even rape his teenage daughter.

In the rational part of his mind he still sees his daughter as his “little girl” and these images are linked to memories recalling feelings of love, tenderness and protectiveness<sup>256</sup>. But after his mind has been altered by porn viewing the new mental model exists where he climaxed many times viewing naked teenage girls – the last mental model often wins as his right brain already recalled the sexually intimate moments while viewing porn and he descends down the funnel<sup>257</sup>.

In this way he might sexually assault his teenage daughter as “rationality” will always lose against the power of the intensified funnel experience and the bodies’ strong chemical hormones<sup>258</sup>. This tragic truth destroys lives and families many times beyond repair.

The last section will deal with the sad case of child pornography and its effects.

### 13. CHILD PORNOGRAPHY

Paedophiles or “child molesters” have one primary goal: to engage in sexual relations with children – they have **placed children at the centre of the process to achieve climax**<sup>259</sup>. Engaging in child pornography might be a result of desensitization to other forms of porn<sup>260</sup>.

---

<sup>256</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, p.126.

<sup>257</sup> Ibid.

<sup>258</sup> Ibid.

<sup>259</sup> Ibid. p.130.

<sup>260</sup> Ibid. p.131.

As was stated in previous sections, mental models are formed during a child's developmental years. As a result, violation of the boundaries of a child during these years will have detrimental effects throughout the child and possibly the child's children's lives as well as they will re-enact what they were taught as children.

In this way, if Satan can succeed in deforming the mental model at this young age he ensures the captivity not only of the individual but also of their lineage.

When molested or abused as a child, the possibility exists that the child will distrust the mother or father (depending on the abuser) in their life, and as a result will have great difficulty accepting God as their Perfect, Loving Father<sup>261</sup> that He is. Without this relationship firmly established in their life they will live a life searching for love that is so freely available to them through a personal relationship with Jesus Christ but will be offered as a counterfeit in the form of sexual addiction by the enemy.

As was seen from the effects of the core beliefs of an addict, distrust is a major issue in the lives of these people as a result of abuse (of any kind) early in their lives.

The onslaught onto the young minds is further seen in the fact that organizations like the American Library Association propose that children ought to have the same rights of unrestricted access to internet pornography that adults have<sup>262</sup>. What is clearly not realized, exposing children to these extreme pornographic images will take away their choice and freedom later in life: they cannot **choose** not to be addicted or violated by these images as they are now what shapes and forms their perspectives and future<sup>263</sup>.

This is not only limited to children of different ages but also to teenagers who are exposed to these invasive images.

---

<sup>261</sup> According to 1 John 3:1; Romans 8:15; Galatians 6:4; Psalms 68:5-6; Matthew 7:11; John 14:6,9; John 15:16

<sup>262</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 132.

<sup>263</sup> Ibid.

Teenagers reach puberty, in which their sex drive is maturing, they are at a vulnerable stage of wanting to be loved and accepted<sup>264</sup>. By exposing them to the “most destructive force they will ever see” will not only change their brain patterns but also set them up for a life of addiction and a world view through the lenses of perverted sex<sup>265</sup>.

This will not only place the individual in bondage but will also possibly jeopardize their future marriage relationship as perverted sex will be the norm. They will place unrealistic expectations on their partners and will always want more from sex. This might result in using more “hard core” sex, such as swinging<sup>266</sup> etc. in order to satisfy the lusts of an addict who is no longer content with sex the way that God intended for it to be.

Donna Rice Hughes, author of Kinds Online, describes that a teenage boys’ psycho-sexual appetite tend to be fully developed within thirty six months after their first ejaculation - once the boy is exposed to pornography, he is **desensitized** in that he is **not likely to form a bonded relationship** and the desire for having one single person later in life is not even something to be pursued<sup>267</sup>.

God said that a man will leave his father and become one flesh with his wife – porn as an attack on the mind takes away this natural and normal desire.

Again it can be seen that as the funnel is exploited in his teenage years, addiction is guaranteed which places the boy in the hands of the enemy for life<sup>268</sup>.

---

<sup>264</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 132.

<sup>265</sup> Ibid.

<sup>266</sup> According to the free online dictionary: A marriage couple that exchanges sexual partners with other couples. (<http://www.thefreedictionary.com/swinger>)

<sup>267</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, pg. 135.

<sup>268</sup> Ibid.

---

A sixteen year old wrote the following<sup>269</sup>:

***“Dear reader,***

***I want to get the word out about how pornography destroys your life and liberty. It enslaves your mind and body. Your mind because it causes you to think all sorts of thought that you wouldn’t normally have thought or even wanted to. Your body because it keeps wanting more and more and when it can’t get enough then you want to do things to women that no one sane or otherwise should be doing.***

***When you try to quit it rips at you and tears you apart because you know what you are doing is wrong and you don’t want to do it, but your mind and body keep begging to have it, to feel the stimulation that it used to get from it. Then, because you are not getting “high” you go into a sense of despair. You feel as if you are sinking into a black abyss with no bottom, your body goes through withdrawals and some nights you shake and shake and cannot stop. Not because you are cold but because you are slowly drawing the poison that was destroying your life.”***

Other effects of porn could be that the young teenage girl later in life wants to look like the porn stars with the perfect bodies. This might lead to eating disorders such as bulimia or anorexia<sup>270</sup>. One can see the onslaught of the enemy especially in the vulnerable teenage years when these teenagers are becoming aware of their sexuality and are craving love and attention. What is worse, is the way that he managed for governments to promote the “rights” of children so that they are so easily exposed to sexualized media.

---

<sup>269</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, pg. 135.

<sup>270</sup> Ibid. p. 134.

## 14. SEXUALIZED MEDIA

Sexualized media is the **gateway** to pornography addiction – images are “physically” stored in the brain as mental models and directly impacts how one thinks and behaves. Sexualized media, in the form of songs, advertisements, magazines, posters<sup>271</sup> etc., plays an extremely important role in re-establishing or **reinforcing wrong neural pathways** in the brain. This is especially done through subliminal messages that are deliberately inserted in the media as will be seen later in this thesis. The next section deals with the resolution of sexual addiction.

## 15. RESOLUTION OF SEXUAL ADDICTION

***“If you think you can’t fall into sexual sin, then you’re godlier than Dawid, stronger than Samson and wiser than Solomon. Unlike any other addiction, sex is at the core of our identity<sup>272</sup>”.***

***Pastor Bill Perkins***

The **attack on the mind** through a child’s core belief system results in various types of addictive behaviours. Addiction is a cycle in itself and reinforces the faulty core belief system every time and addict goes through an addiction cycle. During the addiction cycle lies are not only enforced but the addict gets secluded from their environment, close relationships and eventually themselves. In this way, and as a result of core beliefs not letting the addict trust anyone, they are trapped in their isolation, powerless and left without help they so dearly need.

Sexual addiction and compulsive behaviour has its origins in an impaired core belief system. This impaired belief system rests upon **lies** that the enemy of God planted in the minds of individuals about themselves, about their fellow man and the world around them.

---

<sup>271</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 168.

<sup>272</sup> Ibid. p. xii.



Only the Word of God can provide the **truth** against the lies that the enemy has so cunningly implanted in the minds of human beings. The Word of God is powerful:

***“For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.”***

**Hebrews 4:12**

The Word of God holds the key to the truth that needs to replace the lies of Satan that the addict carries in their core belief system.

The Word goes on to explain:

***“For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh:  
(For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God  
to the pulling down of strong holds;) Casting down imaginations, and  
every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and  
bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ”***

**2 Corinthians 10:3-5**

The Word of God is a weapon (Ephesians 6:17) with which the strongholds in the mind of the addict must be overthrown. Also notice that human kind are to “cast down imaginations” that are not in line with the Word of God. These imaginations are the lies that are kept in the core belief system on an individual that results in mental models accounting for sinful sexual behaviour.

Because the addiction cycle starts with a core belief system that is not Biblically correct the resolution of such a cycle would start exactly there. Because sexual addiction is defined as “a pathological relationship to a mood-altering experience” the following resolution applies: the addict needs to again replace his obsession with meaningful relationships. The four faulty core beliefs formed in the family unit should be **replaced with the truth of the Word of God** to form a new mental model within an individual.

Isolation and alienation from all healthy relationships are integral to the addiction; therefore they need to be dealt with in the individuals' life<sup>273</sup>. The addict is to establish roots in a caring community to re-establish healthy relationships and with the help of this support system so that the addict can start to get perspective on their lives<sup>274</sup>. With help (from God and man), the addict can get rid of dysfunctional thinking and get re-rooted into a new system of beliefs based on the Word of God<sup>275</sup>.

In this way, the addict is able to get a clear picture and knowledge of themselves, without the **mood altering insanity** to insulate them, and can walk the road to recovery and restoration of their own sanity<sup>276</sup>.

Help from others play an integral role in curing the addict as the addiction feeds on itself so that the addict cannot gain control over the addiction<sup>277</sup>.

Together with addiction, is the inability to trust others, and in sexual addiction (an addiction especially charged with social judgement) an even greater isolation for the individual occurs<sup>278</sup>.

Carnes states it in this way<sup>279</sup>:

***“Research [of sexual addiction] is further complicated by the delusional thought processes of addicts, who, in fact, are not aware of the extent of their problems. A long time elapses before recovering addicts have clarity, let alone before they are able and willing to describe their past situations to others.”***

---

<sup>273</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 31.

<sup>274</sup> Ibid.

<sup>275</sup> Ibid.

<sup>276</sup> Ibid.

<sup>277</sup> Ibid.

<sup>278</sup> Ibid.

<sup>279</sup> Ibid. p. 70.

The addicts are many times not aware of how far out of touch they are with reality and need help to reconnect with society in order to brake the thought patterns that they are captivated by. The following table provides an example of how the faulty core beliefs might the displaced by the Word of God:

**Table 2. Core Beliefs of Different Mental Models**

FAULTY CORE BELIEFS AS A RESULT OF A DISTORTION OF THE MENTAL MODEL DURING CHILDHOOD <sup>280</sup>	FUNDAMENTAL CORE BELIEFS ACCORDING TO THE TRUTH OF GOD <sup>281</sup>
I am basically a bad, unworthy person	I am a worthwhile person deserving of respect I am fearfully and wonderfully made (Ps 139)
No one would love me as I am	I am loved and accepted by people who know me as I am I am loved and accepted (John 3:16, Isaiah 41:8-9, John 6:37)
My needs are never going to be met if I have to depend on others	My needs can be met by others if I let them know what I need My needs will be met (Psalm 123)
Sex is my most important need	Sex is but one expression of my need and care for others Sex was created by God to exist in a healthy marriage (Hebrews 13:4)

The Bible provides the solution:

***"All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness."***

***2 Timothy 3:16***

---

<sup>280</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, pp. 112-116.

<sup>281</sup> Ibid. p. 168.

It clearly states that the Word of God is inspired by God Himself and will provide the answer to replace a faulty core belief system with sound doctrine, reproof, correction and instructions to lead a **righteous life** before God.

The way addicts view themselves opens or closes them to relationships of intimacy<sup>282</sup>. Carnes goes on to explain<sup>283</sup>:

***“Without that fundamental acceptance of self, nurturing and intimacy can be closed out.”***

This is a very important point because as long as the addict does not believe the truth of the Word of God about themselves they will not be able to have intimacy with God or their fellow man and will stay in their isolated state.

In the Word of God, this basic truth of “loving” and accepting oneself is captured in the second part of the Greatest commandment given by Jesus Christ himself:

***“Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.”***

***Matthew 22:36-40***

One cannot love anyone else if one is not able to love oneself. This selfless love can only come by receiving the love of God and then letting His love flow through to other people<sup>284</sup>. The opposite of loving oneself is seen in the behaviour of an addict who believes that they are unworthy; they hide in their own private world in which they are accountable to no one<sup>285</sup>.

---

<sup>282</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 171.

<sup>283</sup> Ibid.

<sup>284</sup> Meyer Joyce (2011) Love out Loud, 365 Devotions for Loving God, Loving Yourself, and Loving Others. Faith Words: New York: Faith Words, p.1.

<sup>285</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p.171.

---

They hide their pain and loneliness by relying on their addiction to comfort them and in their isolation they are powerless to help themselves<sup>286</sup>. By admitting and repenting of their sin, they are open to receive help from others and in addition, the “veil of secrecy” about their secret world in which Satan tried to hold them captive is now removed and they can begin the road to recovery<sup>287</sup>. The Word of God can light their way to freedom and remove them from captivity.

The truth that is veiled in an addict’s life in terms of the first core belief is that they believe that they are unworthy instead of seeing their addiction as a sin or even an illness that is destroying their lives<sup>288</sup>.

Distinguishing between the person and the sin is an important fact to be realized by the addict in order to replace the core belief that they are unworthy, a lie planted by Satan himself<sup>289</sup>.

The sin needs to be revealed and repented of in order for the restoration process to begin, the word of God states it this way:

***“Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.”***

***James 5:16***

Satan loves to keep things hidden or secret, away from the Light of the Word of God (John 1:1). In this way, addicts are kept captive in their sin, unable to break free. Even the famous Twelve Steps of Alcoholics Anonymous acknowledges the fact that sins needs to be revealed in the presence of other addicts in order for the healing process to begin<sup>290</sup>.

---

<sup>286</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p.171.

<sup>287</sup> Ibid.

<sup>288</sup> Ibid.

<sup>289</sup> Ibid.

<sup>290</sup> Ibid. pp. 168-172.

A sense of self-worth needs to be restored; this is something that no addiction can provide the addict with<sup>291</sup>. Only Jesus Christ and through His power can one be set free, as He was sent to set the captives free (Isaiah 61). The importance of the Bible verse that one should renew one's mind cannot be overemphasised:

***“And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.”***

***Romans 12:2***

In the light of this verse, the functioning of the brain in establishing habitual patterns or rather, neuronal networks, it is clear that when the brain forms new thinking patterns according to the Word of God that new behaviour that are acceptable to God will result from it. This can be done by practising intentional thinking<sup>292</sup> as what you think you ultimately become as the Bible states:

***“Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life.”***

***Proverbs 4:23***

Establishing new thought patterns will take a long time and it is only with persistence that one will be able to “rewire” and replace the brains thought patterns with the truth of God's Word. In this way, getting addicted to pornography is a ***learnt behaviour*** and can be replaced by renewing the mind<sup>293</sup>. Pornography physically and chemically alters the brain, the more one engages in it, the more “automatic” the body's response will become as a result of new neural pathways formed<sup>294</sup>.

---

<sup>291</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 177.

<sup>292</sup> Relevant Magazine: ([Relevant Magazine: http://www.relevantmagazine.com/life/whole-life/features/29332-this-is-your-brain-on-porn](http://www.relevantmagazine.com/life/whole-life/features/29332-this-is-your-brain-on-porn))

<sup>293</sup> Ibid

<sup>294</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 151.

---

Safeguarding ones children from the dangers of becoming entangled in pornography is to talk about sex in a healthy educational way. The Word of God instructs specifically that children are to be taught right from wrong at a young age in order for them to remain on the righteous path that the Lord has for them:

***“Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it.”***

***Proverbs 22:6***

Sexual intimacy is a gift given to mankind by God<sup>295</sup>, it is sacred and meant to stay within the boundaries that God intended for it to be – within a healthy marriage. Sexual feelings are placed there for a special purpose and direct these powers in healthy ways<sup>296</sup>. Sex outside of marriage, will result in disaster as it allows a foot hole for the enemy into ones’ life. It holds true that:

***“you cannot break universal laws you can only break yourself against them<sup>297</sup>”.***

## **16. THE SPIRITUAL SIDE TO PORNOGRAPHY**

One has to be aware that pornographic materials are often loaded with demons, or evil spirits<sup>298</sup>. The presence of these demons in the house brings with it all kinds of sexual lust, masturbation and lack of mental concentration. It also opens the gates to homosexuality, sexual fantasy, fornication, adultery, perversion, sexual uncleanness, incest, bestiality, and many other sexual spirits<sup>299</sup>. This fact cannot be ignored as the enemy will always take an opportunity of sin to gain entrance into ones’ life.

---

<sup>295</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenuim: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 152.

<sup>296</sup> Ibid.

<sup>296</sup> Ibid.

<sup>297</sup> Ibid.

<sup>298</sup> Ing Richard (1996) *Spiritual warfare*. USA: Whitaker House, p. 86-86.

<sup>299</sup> Ibid. p. 88.

The counsellor should always be aware to the fact that deeper spiritual bondages may be present when dealing with sexual addictions such as pornography.

## 17. CONCLUSION

Navajo women create the most beautiful tapestries in the world:



**Figure 6.** Navajo tapestry<sup>300</sup>.

Each tapestry consists of individual coloured threads that are carefully chosen and then woven into the tapestry with great precision and care<sup>301</sup>. Individual threads are added one at a time until it forms a “whole” and results in the tapestry as a complete piece of art<sup>302</sup>.

---

<sup>300</sup> ([http://www.nativeamericantradingco.com/images/236\\_Crystal\\_Tapestry.jpg](http://www.nativeamericantradingco.com/images/236_Crystal_Tapestry.jpg))

<sup>301</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 67.

<sup>302</sup> Ibid.



In his book, Mark Kastleman very accurately describes how these “tapestries” of thoughts are seen as a whole<sup>303</sup>:

***“Each image we take in, each thread of thought we allow to be weaved into the tapestry of our minds, is added to the whole and determines who we are.”***

Mental models are formed when one is still young. These mental models consists out of several belief systems, that which one believes is true about oneself, relationships as well as the environment. When these mental models are established an individual will act according to these models. God’s Word states it in this way: mankind are to guard their hearts for out of it flows the issues of life (Proverbs 23:7). They are to establish themselves in the truth of the Word of God – as this will set them free:

***“And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.”***

***John 8:32***

When a mental model is formed according to the way God intended, according to His Word, correct living and life choices will follow. But as in the case with sexual addiction, these core beliefs are faulty and inaccurate producing behaviour conducive to sexual addiction<sup>304</sup> that will eventually destroy the lives of those it is holding captive.

Sexual addiction, such as pornography, is nothing more than an onslaught on the sexuality of mankind by the enemy of God in order to entrap them in the deepest kind of bondages ever imagined.

---

<sup>303</sup> Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 67.

<sup>304</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) *Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction.* Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, P. 16.

---

The only answer to these faulty mental models in the mind, is freedom through Jesus Christ, the working of the Holy Spirit as well as the Holy Word of God to which the mind needs to be renewed.

## **APPENDIX A**

### **Core belief system of the addict<sup>305</sup>**

#### **Core belief 1: Self-image – I am basically a bad, unworthy person**

##### **Interior world**

Addicts conclude from their family experiences that they are not worthwhile persons. Feelings of inadequacy and failure predominate. Addicts often see humiliation and degradation as justified or deserved. The desperate struggle around sexual compulsivity absolutely confirms this belief and enhances feelings of low self-worth. Addicts are committed to hiding the secret reality of their addiction at all costs because of their unworthiness. Yet the addiction guides almost all behaviour and decisions.

##### **Exterior world**

Addicts create a front of “normalcy” to hide their sense of inadequacy. They may even appear grandiose and full of exaggerated self-importance. As consequences to behaviours emerge, the front contrasts with actions that seem to be degrading or self-defeating or both. Others see decisions or behaviours as irrational, incomprehensible, or even self-destructive, but not “normal”.

##### **Family and friends**

Close friends and family members become angry and frustrated with the addict's egocentricity, especially when there is insensitivity to others. Not knowing the interior world of an addict, they are troubled by what looks like destructive or curious behaviour that does not fit the image that the addict projects.

---

<sup>305</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) *Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction*. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 138.

---

## **Core belief 2: Relationships**

### **Interior world: No one would love me as I am**

Addicts believe that everyone would abandon them if the truth were known. They have a constant fear of being dependant on others. Addicts perceive their sexual behaviour as so bad that everything becomes their “fault”.

Addict assumes responsibility for all the pain in loved ones. Honest guilt and remorse cannot be expressed because that would require honesty about behaviour. Addicts become progressively more isolated.

### **Exterior world**

Addicts create the image of being in charge of life and in no need of help. They appear unaffected by any problem, but will often do the extreme or indulgent things as if making up for something. No explanation is offered, however.

Some addicts may continue to be charming and sociable, but all addicts become “unreachable” personally as they close off all areas of vulnerability.

### **Family and friends**

Significant person's in the addicts' lives start to feel pushed away, useless, neglected, and unnecessary. They become confused at seemingly generous gestures, but in the absence of any personal warmth or presence.

Anger and hurt accumulate with a sense of abandonment in reaction to the addicts' contradictory behaviour.

### **Core belief 3: Needs – My needs are never going to be met if I have to depend on others**

#### **Interior world**

Addicts feel unloved and unlovable, which means other people, cannot be depended on to love them, so their needs will not be met.

The resulting rage becomes internalized as depression, resentment, self-pity, and even suicidal feelings. Because they have no confidence in other's love, addicts become calculating, strategizing, manipulative, and ruthless. Rules and laws are made for people who are lovable. Those who are unloved survive in other ways.

#### **Exterior world**

Addicts' rage about unmet needs in the past prevents the possibility of expressing needs now because they anticipate being rejected. Addicts appear not to want or need anything.

They are purposefully unclear about their intentions in relationships and are thus seductive in behaviour, i.e., they try to be affirmed or cared for without expressing that they need it so they will not risk rejection. Addicts make extensive efforts to show how respectable and law-abiding they are.

#### **Family and friends**

Those who are close start to see the double life, the Jekyll and Hyde, in the addicts' worlds. The addicts' ups and downs remain difficult to understand. Worse, distrust and disbelief in the addicts begin. Things appear to be so smooth, yet the intuition is that they are not. Inconsistencies between the addicts' public and private lives confirm these intuitions.

## **Core belief 4: Sexuality – Sex is my most important need**

### **Interior world**

Addicts confuse nurturing and sex. Support, care, affirmation, and love are all sexualized. Absolute terror of life without sex combines with feelings of unworthiness of such intense sexual desires. Sexual activity never meets the need for love and care, but continues to be seen as the only avenue to meeting those needs.

Addicts have a high need to control all situations in an effort to guarantee sex. Yet there is a secret fear of being sexually out of control. Addicts promise themselves to stop or limit sexual behaviour because of this fear.

### **Exterior world**

Sexual obsession pervades lifestyle and behaviour. Addicts make maximum effort to ensure all possible sexual opportunities. Addicts at all level of addictive behaviour feel the need to control sexual access, that is, addicts involved in prostitution, exhibitionism, voyeurism, incest, etc. have in common the goal of protecting the “source of supply”.

Seeking degrading or humiliating sexual experiences simply extends internal feelings of unworthiness. Addicts publically profess extreme sexual propriety, however, even to the extent of moral self-righteousness about sexual matters. Cover-ups, lies and deceptions are made to conceal personal sexual behaviour.

### **Family and friends**

The addict’s protestations of high sexual morality obscure the impact of sexual obsession on friends and families. Close family and friends tend to reject suspicions of sexual compulsivity because of the addicts’ “values”.

As evidence of powerlessness over behaviour and unmanageability mounts, these persons become confused, not knowing what to believe. In addition, they do not wish to intervene in something so personal. Since they do not feel close enough to become involved, they chose the other option, which is to withdraw.

## **APPENDIX B**

### **The Coaddicts' World<sup>306</sup>**

#### **Coaddicts**

#### **Core belief 1: Self-image: I am basically a bad, unworthy person**

#### **Interior world**

Coaddicts grow up in families in which their self-worth is in constant jeopardy. Feelings of inadequacy and failure parallel the addict's sense of unworthiness. Not believing there are any options, coaddicts tolerate abusive, humiliating, and degrading behaviour. Coaddicts are obsessed with sex since sex is the proof of love.

#### **Exterior world**

Self-righteous contempt often masks the coaddicts' interior fears. Aggressive, critical, controlling behaviour switches with compliance and enabling. Either position shares a martyrdom role in which the coaddict is being "victimized".

#### **Addicts' Response to Co-addicts**

Addicts are in a self-serving double bind in the relationship. When coaddicts are critical and judgmental, addicts use this to justify abusive, compulsive behaviour. When coaddicts are submissive and compliant, addicts feel burdened, exploited, and critical. These feelings also serve as a rationale for addictive behaviour.

---

<sup>306</sup> Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, pp. 142-146.

---



## **Core belief 2: Relationships: No one would love me as I am**

### **Interior world**

Coaddicts in relationship reflect their basic distrust of others' love and care for them. To be in a relationship engages the three Coaddictive fears: that coaddicts would lose their identity in the relationship, that they would be forced to deny what they know to be true, and that meeting their needs would have a price.

To tell others the painful "secrets" would guarantee abandonment. To be honest with the addicts would sacrifice safety of being self-righteous or compliant. Coaddicts, like addicts, assume that they are responsible for all the pain in loved ones.

### **Exterior world**

Coaddicts go to extreme lengths to appear self-sufficient. They seem unaffected by any problems and will expend intense energy to conceal problems. In fact, they will take on many extra responsibilities, being all things to all people. In general, they often seek relationships in which they can dominate or nurture so they can be intimate with minimum risk. This self-sufficient exterior protects the family secrets. Also, the internal belief that the coaddicts are responsible for everything is acted out.

### **Addict's response to coaddicts**

Addicts rely on coaddicts to pick up the pieces – especially as powerlessness and unmanageability increase. Yet addicts may start to be critical of coaddicts' efforts when they assume extra responsibility. Internally, addicts start to feel progressively more useless and without places in the coaddicts' lives.

Addicts feel unneeded, especially when coaddicts are busy nurturing others, such as children. The coaddicts' involvements serve as further justification for compulsiveness.

**Core belief 3: Needs- My needs are never going to be met if I have to depend upon others**

**Interior world**

Coaddicts' desperate need for love and nurturing exceeds any person's ability to respond. They make perfectionistic demands on all aspects of the addict's behaviour in a misdirected attempt to guarantee satisfaction of their needs. When they are disappointed by the addicts' failure to meet the impossible demands, rage becomes internalized, resulting in despair, self-pity and resentment. These down times alternate with periodic hope and exhilaration that things will change.

Coaddicts' conniving manipulation and criticism are based on the assumptions that if the addicts met the high standards, needs would be met. Addicts become the coaddicts' source of self-worth and good feelings. The conviction that the coaddicts will have to pay for love and care pervades all relationships. To be affirmed with no requirements goes beyond the coaddicts' experience.

**Exterior world**

Martyrdom accompanies the coaddicts' systemic efforts to make themselves indispensable. In exchange, coaddicts expect addicts to furnish proof of care and love. Failure to do so results in further efforts to reform the addicts or in self-righteousness punishment and rejection.

Coaddicts do not communicate personal needs, only disappointment in unmet expectations.

Preoccupation with addicts often results in the denial or tolerance of the addict's behaviour. Coaddicts "keep score" of what is owed in the relationship. The more coaddicts do for the addicts, the more they expect in return.

### **Addict' Response to coaddicts**

Addicts fail to perceive coaddicts needs. Partially, their failure stems from the addictive preoccupation and sexualisation of all needs. The coaddicts' behaviour, however, also obscures the issues in the relationship.

Addicts grow resentful of the coaddicts' expectations, yet also feel a sense of failure for not meeting them – which no one person could do. Coaddictive judgments simply document what addicts already fear to be true. Yet addicts remain assured that coaddicts will not leave while they are coaddictively preoccupied – as long as they are still judging, they are still there.

### **Core belief 4: Sexuality – Sex is the most important sign of love**

Coaddicts believe sexual attention proves they are loveable. Sex becomes a trade-off for love. Therefore, coaddicts have a great fear of being unattractive and sexually inadequate. When addicts are sexual with others, coaddicts feel total personal rejection, adding to their sense of unlovability.

Given the stakes, coaddicts have difficulty exploring or enjoying their own sexuality. Exploitive experiences foster deep resentment and rage which further validate all the Coaddictive core beliefs.

### **Exterior world**

Because sex is a trade-off for love, coaddicts may find themselves being sexual when they do not wish to be, or worse, participating in sexual behaviour that is degrading and humiliating. Coaddicts may also dress or act seductively to get attention.

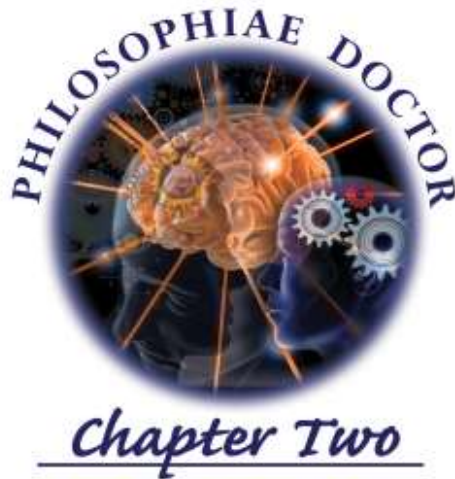
Efforts to control the addict's sexual obsession include the use of sex to manipulate addicts to prevent them from being sexual with others.

Sexual attitudes of the coaddicts can continue the external themes of self-sufficiency, self-righteousness, and martyrdom.

### **Addict's response to coaddicts**

Addicts feel confused by the coaddicts' contradictory signals about sex. Often addicts misinterpret the coaddicts' need for relationship as sexual overtures and then totally fail to understand the coaddicts' feelings of being exploited. Addicts are ashamed when sexual feelings are not returned, since that confirms that their sexual intensity is bad. Also, there are feelings of resentment about the coaddicts' efforts to control and judge the addict's sexual behaviour, all of which perpetuates the addiction cycle of the addicts.

-----oOo-----



*The separation and destruction of God's children through  
the onslaught on gender and sexuality through the mind*

---

## 1. INTRODUCTION

The creation of mankind begins in the Book of Genesis:

***"So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them."***

***Genesis 1:27***

God created mankind in ***His Image***. He created them ***male and female*** – two distinct sexes each formed by the very hand of God in a very unique way. The sexuality of mankind forms a very integral part of their being; it is at the very core of who they are. Therefore, a cunning enemy wanting to destroy the very prized possession of his enemy, God, Satan targets the sexuality of mankind through ***the mind*** in such a way that mankind are made to believe a myriad of lies about their sexuality that leads to all sorts of perversions.

---

Attacking mankind on a sexual level not only leaves them vulnerable to the worst kind of **spiritual bondages** but also leaves them with physical illnesses that are, for the most part, incurable – in other words, kills off the precious human beings that God created and intended for His glory and pleasure:

***“Bring all who claim me as their God, for I have made them for my glory. It was I who created them.”***

***Isaiah 43:7***

One of the ways in which Satan, the adversary of God, brutally attacks mankind is through **deception**, one of his most powerful weapons used against mankind. Satan uses **the mind** to create strongholds through which he can control - through his lies - the way in which mankind **thinks** and what they believe to be true about themselves and their sexuality.

The mind is so powerful that whatever man believes is not only what he becomes (Proverbs 23:7), but also, even though God may have physically created a human being as being male or female, through deception (which is “to make [someone] believe something that is not true<sup>1</sup>”) one can be made to believe that their sexual identity was a “mistake” by God.

By attacking mankind on their sexuality only one thing is needed: **a perversion in their belief about their God-given sexuality**. In this way, Satan has over the years managed to trick people into believing that they are either gay<sup>2</sup> or lesbian<sup>3</sup> – that they were “born this way” or God actually intended for them to be the opposite sex as what they are. The Bible is very clear about homosexuality as a very **distasteful sin** in the eyes of God. The following section gives an overview of the Biblical viewpoint on homosexuality as a result of a perversion in the minds of those who are practising homosexuality.

---

<sup>1</sup> Deceive (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/deceive>)

<sup>2</sup> According to Merriam Webster Dictionary: Gay: Sexually attracted to someone who is the same sex (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/gay>)

<sup>3</sup> According to Merriam Webster Dictionary: Lesbian: A woman who is sexually attracted to other women: a female homosexual. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/lesbian>)

## 2. A BIBLICAL PERSPECTIVE ON HOMOSEXUALITY

From Scripture it is crystal clear that homosexuality is regarded **as a sin** and no less. In the very first Book of the Bible – during the Creation Story – God creates mankind with great care and definite intention:

***"So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth."***

***Genesis 1:27-28***

From Scripture it is seen that God created mankind in two distinct sexes: male (*zakar*) and female (*neqevah*) as the Hebrew words indicate<sup>4</sup>. Directly after creating them God blessed them and said ***"Be fruitful and multiply"***. In other words God created mankind with the intent for them to **procreate**. After the Great Flood, when all of the earths' inhabitants were destroyed by the Great Flood, Noah and his family – the only ones who survived the Flood because of their righteousness in God's eyes - stepped onto dry land one of the first things God said was for them to be fruitful and to multiply:

***"And God blessed Noah and his sons, and said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth."***

***Genesis 9:1***

They were to repopulate the earth. God intended to give mankind children as a heritage and as gift from Him:

***"Lo, children are an heritage of the LORD: and the fruit of the womb is his reward."***

***Psalms 127:3***

---

<sup>4</sup> Bahnsen Greg L (1978) Homosexuality: a Biblical view. USA: Baker Book House, p. 28.

Children can only be the result of the perfect union between male and female, as this is the way that God intended for it to be. God also created animals, male and female – the whole of nature was designed in this **perfect order**. God did not create a male to have sexual relations with another male or for a female to have sexual relations with another female. Jesus Christ, the Son of God, describes how God intended for a marriage relationship to work:

***“And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female, And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.”***

***Matthew 19:4-6***

Jesus referred to marriage as a heterosexual unity between man and wife (also according to Ephesians 5:31). The union is to be between male and female, they are to become one and are not to be separated.

God, the Creator of mankind, **assigns** to His creations their **essential identity and function** and **defines man's proper relationships** as He intended for it to be. In this way, again we see that it is clear from Scripture that God defined for mankind to have a **male/female relationship**<sup>5</sup>.

Mankind is not in a position to “decide” whether he/she has another “sexual orientation”. This is assigned by God. He formed every individual with His very Own hand in their mother's womb (Psalm 139) – He devised a great and wonderful plan for each person's life (Jeremiah 29:11) and created mankind in the sex that He did for a very specific reason.

---

<sup>5</sup> Bahnsen Greg L (1978) Homosexuality: a Biblical view. USA: Baker Book House, p. 28.



One author summarizes this fact<sup>6</sup>:

***“Because man’s sexual identity is defined by God, because his orientation is ordained by God, and because his sexual activity is circumscribed within a heterosexual marriage context, homosexuality cannot be viewed merely as a variant sexual preference or accidental variation within creation (akin to left-handedness).”***

The future of hope that God intended for His children to have is **stolen** by the enemy as a result of a wrong core belief or deception in the mind about their sexuality as will be seen.

Furthermore, homosexuality is a sin and the act is severely condemned by God in His Word. In Leviticus homosexuality is mentioned *per se* as being a sin:

***Do not practice homosexuality, having sex with another man as with a woman. It is a detestable sin.***

***Leviticus 18:22 (NLV)***

Also in Leviticus 20:13:

***“If a man practices homosexuality, having sex with another man as with a woman, both men have committed a detestable act. They must both be put to death, for they are guilty of a capital offense.***

***Leviticus 20:13 (NLV)***

The King James version reads as follows:

***“If a man also lie with mankind, as he lieth with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them.”***

***Leviticus 20:13 (KJV)***

---

<sup>6</sup> Bahnsen Greg L (1978) Homosexuality: a Biblical view. USA: Baker Book House, p. 30.

The sin of homosexuality is an abomination unto the Lord and, as can be seen, was a sin punishable by **death** in the Old Testament. God's Word is very clear about homosexuality.

Genesis 19:1-19 tells the story of Lot, a righteous man in God's eyes:

***And there came two angels to Sodom at even; and Lot sat in the gate of Sodom: and Lot seeing them rose up to meet them; and he bowed himself with his face toward the ground; And he said, Behold now, my lords, turn in, I pray you, into your servant's house, and tarry all night, and wash your feet, and ye shall rise up early, and go on your ways. And they said, Nay; but we will abide in the street all night. And he pressed upon them greatly; and they turned in unto him, and entered into his house; and he made them a feast, and did bake unleavened bread, and they did eat. But before they lay down, the men of the city, even the men of Sodom, compassed the house round, both old and young, all the people from every quarter: And they called unto Lot, and said unto him, Where are the men which came in to thee this night? bring them out unto us, that we may know them. And Lot went out at the door unto them, and shut the door after him, And said, I pray you, brethren, do not so wickedly. Behold now, I have two daughters which have not known man; let me, I pray you, bring them out unto you, and do ye to them as is good in your eyes: only unto these men do nothing; for therefore came they under the shadow of my roof. And they said, Stand back. And they said again, This one fellow came in to sojourn, and he will needs be a judge: now will we deal worse with thee, than with them. And they pressed sore upon the man, even Lot, and came near to break the door. But the men put forth their hand, and pulled Lot into the house to them, and shut to the door. And they smote the men that were at the door of the house with blindness, both small and great: so that they wearied themselves to find the door. And the men said unto Lot, Hast thou here any besides? son in law, and thy sons, and thy daughters, and whatsoever thou hast in the city, bring them out of this place: For we will destroy this place, because the cry of them is waxen great before the face of the LORD; and the LORD hath sent us to destroy it. And Lot went out, and spake unto his sons in law, which married his daughters, and said, Up, get you out of this place; for the LORD will destroy this city. But he seemed as one that mocked unto his sons in law. And when the morning arose, then the angels hastened Lot, saying, Arise, take thy wife, and thy two daughters, which are here; lest thou be consumed in the iniquity of the city.***

**And while he lingered, the men laid hold upon his hand, and upon the hand of his wife, and upon the hand of his two daughters; the LORD being merciful unto him: and they brought him forth, and set him without the city. And it came to pass, when they had brought them forth abroad, that he said, Escape for thy life; look not behind thee, neither stay thou in all the plain; escape to the mountain, lest thou be consumed. And Lot said unto them, Oh, not so, my LORD: Behold now, thy servant hath found grace in thy sight, and thou hast magnified thy mercy, which thou hast shewed unto me in saving my life; and I cannot escape to the mountain, lest some evil take me, and I die.**

**Genesis 19:1-29**

Lot was a righteous man living in a city full of defilement. When two angels of the Lord came to visit Lot in the city of Sodom, known for its unrighteousness in the eyes of God, the men of the city wanted Lot's "visitors", who were mistaken for "normal" men, to have sex with them ("know them").

In the culture of the time, hospitality meant a great deal to the people of the city and visitors were always to be treated with the utmost respect<sup>7</sup>. The men who came to Lot's house did not mean to show his visitors respect but rather came to have sexual relations with the two men who were not "from the town". This is proven by the fact in Lot's reply to their request by offering his daughters instead – so that the men might have sex with them in order for the men not to sodomize the angels.

God's **judgement** fell upon the city not only as a result of their idolatry, pride and rebellion (Matthew 10:14-15; 11:20-24) but also because of the homosexual practices that were happening in the city (according to 2 Peter 2:6-10 and Jude 7 where both Peter and Jude ascribes Sodom's sin to homosexuality)<sup>8,9</sup>.

Furthermore, the Kingdom of God are offered as a gift for those who accept God's Sacrifice on the Cross, His Own Son, Jesus Christ, will not be inherited by those who practise homosexuality as the following verses indicate:

---

<sup>7</sup> Bahnsen Greg L (1978) Homosexuality: a Biblical view. USA: Baker Book House, pp. 32-33.

<sup>8</sup> Lutzer Erwin W (2004) The Truth about same sex marriage. 6 Things you must know about what's really at stake. USA: Moody Publishers, p. 17.

<sup>9</sup> Bahnsen Greg L (1978) Homosexuality: a Biblical view. USA: Baker Book House, pp. 31-32.

**Don't you realize that those who do wrong will not inherit the Kingdom of God? Don't fool yourselves. Those who indulge in sexual sin, or who worship idols, or commit adultery, or are male prostitutes, or practice homosexuality, or are thieves, or greedy people, or drunkards, or are abusive, or cheat people—none of these will inherit the Kingdom of God.**

**1 Corinthians 6:9-10**

This means that those who actively practise homosexuality as a way of life will not be let into heaven once Jesus Christ returns or when they die. It is considered a sin that would literally keep individuals practising it from enjoying their God-given right (as a result of the death of Jesus Christ) to inherit the Kingdom of God! What an incredible price to pay!

One can clearly deduct from the Biblical accounts given that God does not approve of the sin of homosexuality and that it will cost one one's rightful place in heaven. If God did not create mankind to have homosexual relationships and condemns it as a sin, how could one ever believe that God would approve of their homosexual behaviour? Or that God would create mankind as being homosexual, as many homosexuals believe themselves to be as created by God "in this way", and then condemn<sup>10</sup> them to hell if the Bible clearly states that God is God of *love* (according to 1 John 4:18)? This does not make sense. The Bible does however state that God will give these offenders [those who practise homosexuality] over to their sexual lust as a result of not believing in Him and His Word but relying on their own understanding:

***"Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image ... Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves ... For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet.***

---

<sup>10</sup>Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 46.

***And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them."***

***Romans 1:22-24,26-28,32***

From this passage one can see that after professing **themselves** to wise and refusing to honour and acknowledge God as their Creator, homosexual behaviour followed<sup>11</sup>. It literally says that God "gave them up" to the unclean lusts of their hearts and their **vile** affections. The Scripture continues to say that homosexuality is a sin punishable by death.

From the Scripture it can also be seen that the sins that they are practising goes "against nature" in other words, that this is not the natural way in which God designed the human being to function or to operate<sup>12</sup>. Important to note is that the Bible speaks of homosexuality as a **behaviour**<sup>13</sup> not an identity.

It is crystal clear from Scripture that God does not approve of homosexuality and certainly did not create it. There are several secular views on homosexuality that tries to justify why homosexual behaviour exists and why it is justified as a "way of life". Some of these views will briefly be discussed in the next section.

### **3. HOMOSEXUALITY AS VIEWED FROM A SCIENCE, NATURE AND NURTURE PERSPECTIVE**

This section is by no means exhaustive when it will explain some of the secular views regarding homosexuality. The purpose of this section is to give a brief insight into some of the deceptions in the secular world that exists to try and justify a clearly condemned sin, homosexuality.

---

<sup>11</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: SP Publications, p. 29.

<sup>12</sup>Lutzer Erwin W (2004) The Truth about same sex marriage. 6 Things you must know about what's really at stake. USA: Moody Publishers, p. 18.

<sup>13</sup>Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 47.

Because these deceptions or flawed reasonings are so cleverly designed by the enemy, they are easy to believe by those who do not know or care to know the truth of God and are therefore destroyed (Hosea 4:6). And as the Bible states, those who do not care to know God as their Creator and choose to worship the creation (themselves or any other form of idol), God will give over to their lusts that will result in homosexual behaviour:

***“For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet.”***

***Romans 1:18-27***

Many explanations are given for why someone would consider themselves to “be homosexual”. The “Essentialist” view states that a person is by “nature” emotionally and sexually attracted to members of the same sex<sup>14</sup>. This view originated from Aristotle and was driven into modern day society by the works of Havelock Ellis, Edward Carpenter and others<sup>15</sup>.

---

<sup>14</sup>Lutzer Erwin W (2004) The Truth about same sex marriage. 6 Things you must know about what’s really at stake. USA: Moody Publishers, p. 21.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid.

In this view, mankind is seen to be “essentially” created to be attracted to the same sex. Since the late seventies, in which sociobiology (that tries to explain human behaviour in terms of natural selection)<sup>16</sup> the Essentialist Theory has revived. This theory stems from neo-Darwinian determinism and practising “gay Christians” hold that “God made us this way”<sup>17</sup>.

Many homosexuals, who do not know the Word of God, and who do not understand why they are attracted to the same sex as a result of either taking a deception from the enemy or from “choosing” that they are homosexual **believe** the lie that God created them to be homosexual. As a result strongholds are formed in their minds about themselves and about God. The enemy can use this to gain entry into the life of the individual.

The next standpoint that tries to explain (or justify) homosexual behaviour is the “Constructionist” viewpoint that states that social and environmental causes are the result of someone being homosexual<sup>18</sup> as in the case of Peter Tatchell (founder of Outrage!, a British Gay, Lesbian and Bisexual group) and Darrel Yates Rist of the Gay and Lesbian Alliance Against Defamation<sup>19</sup>. According to this view, factors such as society or contemporary culture have resulted in the “shaping” of these individuals so that they are “made” homosexual. In this view the “upbringing” of a person could also be the result of their homosexuality.

Ed Hurst, a writer on Biblical sexuality writes:

***“If we consider any or all of the previously mentioned factors to be possible it follows them that we are not simply the product of our environment, but that we are “the product of our environment” and these “inborn factors”.***

---

<sup>16</sup>Lutzer Erwin W (2004) The Truth about same sex marriage. 6 Things you must know about what’s really at stake. USA: Moody Publishers, p. 21.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid. p. 23.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid.

***This could explain why two individuals who share essentially the same environment develop different personalities. The inborn factors cause them to react to their environment differently. It is my belief that some “inborn” factors may contribute to the development of homosexual attractions and identity but that (1) they are not sufficient in themselves to produce homosexuality; (2) they do not always product homosexuality; and (3) homosexual attractions and identity that are partially rooted in “inborn” causes are not irreversible<sup>20</sup>.***

The deception has gone so far as to include Science in order to provide an answer to homosexuality. “Scientists” have been advised and have been trying to “prove” in scientific studies that being homosexual might be a genetic predisposition. Countless studies have been employed with the most preposterous “scientific” experiments that compare different biological features to prove that homosexuality might be something that one “cannot help”. From a Scriptural perspective – as a result of ***bloodline curses*** that being more prone to homosexuality is possible as was discussed in her PhD thesis, by Dr Christina Malan<sup>21</sup>.

Dr Malan names several spiritual causes for homosexuality namely: in utero experiences, sins of the forefathers, perversion, cultural inheritance and sodomy<sup>22</sup>. In utero experiences can have an influence on the spirit of a child as a child’s spirit is present once conception has taken place. The Bible states that there is a spirit in man and the breath of the Almighty gives man understanding (according to Job 32:8). A baby, who is not yet developed in his mind to think or reason is able to perceive what is said about him/her with their spirit while still in the womb<sup>23</sup>.

---

<sup>20</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) *Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality*. USA: Scripture Press Publications, pp. 58-59.

<sup>21</sup> Malan Christina Dr (2010) *The perversion of mankind through sexual brokenness and deviation with special reference to homosexuality, destroying God’s purpose for Godly bloodlines*. South Africa: Radah Ministries

<sup>22</sup> Malan Christina Dr (2010) *The perversion of mankind through sexual brokenness and deviation with special reference to homosexuality, destroying God’s purpose for Godly bloodlines*. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 171.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid. p. 182.



A man's spirit is capable of experiencing many things<sup>24</sup> according to the Word of God (John 13:21, Acts 17:16, Romans 8:15, Isaiah 26:9, Psalm 32:2b, Psalm 51:10, Ezekiel 36:26.27, 2 Corinthians 7:1). The baby's spirit is capable of experiencing the rejection about their gender as radiated by the mother and is born with a sense of not belonging, he/she is confused about his/her identity and their right to live<sup>25</sup>. This might influence their beliefs and outcome in life – what they believe about themselves will be true in their life – they might now believe that they were to be born “the other sex” which would open them up to the possibility of becoming a homosexual.

Sexual sins of the forefathers can be inherited through the generational bloodline in that if a parent were to have a homosexual orientation it might be transferred through the bloodline to the children. Sexual sins have consequences and can be inherited through the bloodline<sup>26</sup>.

The ***Spirit of Perversion*** is one that can lead a person or a nation into all kinds of perversions against the will and nature that God ordained<sup>27</sup>. This is a demonic entity work by leading a person directly in the opposite direction as the way that God commanded<sup>28</sup>. The reality of this spirit is captured in the Book of Isaiah:

***“The Lord hath mingled a perverse spirit in the minds thereof: and they have caused Egypt to err in every work thereof, as a drunken man staggereth in his vomit.”***

***Isaiah 19:14***

In this section in the Bible, due to Egypt's sin, God stepped back from their situation and this spirit was let loose on the people of Egypt. The demonic entity led them into all kinds of perversions where they would then practise homosexuality.

---

<sup>24</sup> Malan Christina Dr (2010) The perversion of mankind through sexual brokenness and deviation with special reference to homosexuality, destroying God's purpose for Godly bloodlines. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 18.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid. p.1.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid. p. 185.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid.

When this spirit operates in the life of an individual they will actually believe that being homosexual is a normal way of living<sup>29</sup>. Their thinking becomes so perverse that it will lead all kinds of sinful acts – the same theme that is mentioned in Romans 8 elsewhere in this chapter.

This perverse spirit could be inherited from generation to generation and is one of the oldest curses in the Old Testament<sup>30</sup> (Exodus 32:4, Deuteronomy 4:10;9:8). Interestingly, the “gay Christian” movement might be a result of the spirit of perversion<sup>31</sup> as this is directly contrary to what God says in His Word about homosexuality being a sin. The ***mind is perverted*** in some way shape or form for these people to believe that being “gay” and being a Christian is somehow tolerable in the eyes of God.

Meanwhile science also deemed to explain the origins of homosexuality. The famous “chromosome study” provided evidence by Dr Dean Hamer, a gay scientist, that there might be a region on the X-chromosome that could account for being “gay” and that it is a genetically inherited trait<sup>32</sup>.

This study however, was nullified when it proved not to be reproducible as well as a proper control group of straight men was not included in the study. Up to date no conclusive evidence could be given that being homosexual is a genetic trait<sup>33</sup>. ***No “gay gene” has ever been found***<sup>34</sup>. There are thousands of studies setting out to prove that homosexuality is a genetic trait.

---

<sup>29</sup> Malan Christina Dr (2010) The perversion of mankind through sexual brokenness and deviation with special reference to homosexuality, destroying God’s purpose for Godly bloodlines. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p.185.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid. pp. 185-186.

<sup>31</sup> Ibid. pp. 187.

<sup>32</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 37.

<sup>33</sup> Biology and sexual orientation ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Biology\\_and\\_sexual\\_orientation](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Biology_and_sexual_orientation))

<sup>34</sup> Genetics and homosexuality: Are people born gay? The Biological basis for Sexual orientation. ([http://www.godandscience.org/evolution/genetics\\_of\\_homosexuality.html](http://www.godandscience.org/evolution/genetics_of_homosexuality.html))

Three of these: the X-chromosome study, the inner ear study and the finger length study set out to prove that biological intervention could be the reason for some individuals being homosexually orientated<sup>35</sup>. Not in one of these studies could the evidence found, be used to prove that homosexuality has a genetic origin. The studies were either inconclusive or could not be reproduced by any other laboratory. In commentary on some of these studies even the gay community were agreeing that homosexuality is a choice rather than a genetic trait as was noted by Peter Tarchell<sup>36</sup> of the gay rights organization Outrage!:

***“I’m amazed that it’s taken this long to destroy what is obviously a totally implausible theory. It is a choice and we should be glad that it’s that way and celebrate it ourselves.”***

Some studies take the physiological differences between men and woman, as was the case in the “inner ear study” to determine if a male could have more female characteristics being gay. This study wanted to prove that gay men would have the same “more sensitive” cochlea amplifier (organ specifically used for hearing) that women do. This study did not have conclusive evidence to prove that homosexuality is a result of a biological origin.

Several other scientific studies have been conducted using various avenues in order to determine whether a person can be born gay or not. Richard Deem, a scientist in microbiology and an apologetist upholding the website *Evidence for God*<sup>37</sup>, did intensive research on this topic and his findings were as follows<sup>38</sup>:

Five categories were used namely, brain structure, hormonal influences, concordance of homosexuality in twins, concordance of genetic markers in siblings and real genetic studies.

---

<sup>35</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, pp. 36-44.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid.

<sup>37</sup> God and Science (<http://www.godandscience.org/>)

<sup>38</sup> The Genetics of homosexuality ([http://www.godandscience.org/evolution/genetics\\_of\\_homosexuality.html](http://www.godandscience.org/evolution/genetics_of_homosexuality.html))

His findings were as follows:

- In brain studies no conclusive evidence was found when studying the brain structures of males and females, gays and straight men.
- On the hormonal studies scientists concludes that since sexual differentiation occurs in the womb as a result of hormonal influences, homosexuality may result from a differential hormone balance in the womb. These studies could not directly measure the hormonal levels in the womb and proxy information such as differences in skeletal size and shape, (ratio of long bones of the arms and legs) or stature and the hand bones in adults have been used (ratio of length of various phalanges). Out of all of these studies some studies contradicted each other and the final conclusion was that none of the studies on hormonal changes during pregnancy could provide evidence of sexual orientation as being an inherited trait. This study was called the “finger length” study and it was conducted by a profession in psychology, S Marc Breedlove<sup>39</sup>
- Twin studies (thus providing genetically identical “samples”) also concluded to be inconclusive with no direct correlations between test groups
- In genetic studies searching for the “gay” gene, only contradicting results were found and again no conclusive evidence could be found amongst the gay brothers who were studied.
- In studying sexual preference or orientation it was found that females many times change their sexual orientation from being homosexual to later becoming heterosexual. If this were a genetic trait, they would not change between being homo- and hetero sexual.

---

<sup>39</sup>Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 42.

Abusive childhood experiences resulting in homosexuality later in life was also studied and in a study of 13 000 New Zealand adults (age 16+) it was found that there was a three-fold higher prevalence of child hood abuse in those who were homosexual than those who were heterosexual<sup>40</sup>. It was however found that childhood abuse was not a major factor in homosexuality since only 15% of homosexuals had experienced abuse during their childhood (compared to 5% among heterosexuals). From this study it was concluded that only 10% of the population could attribute homosexuality to childhood abuse. It was however noted that children raised by same sex parents are more likely than not to become homosexuals themselves.

In a scientific study involving hundreds of homosexual women and men it was found that the reason for their sexual orientation was “a self-report of homosexual feelings which usually preceded homosexual activity by three years<sup>41</sup>.” This study was done by Bell, Wienberg and Hammersmith in 1981 – they found no explicit evidence of domineering mothers and submissive fathers in their study. Their study also concluded that psychological aspect was not to blame for homosexual behaviour but that it must have had at least a partly biological influence as well<sup>42</sup>. Science notes that if there is a biological reason for homosexuality it does not lie in the varying levels of sex hormones during adulthood.

In the book, *Physiology of Behaviour* it is also concluded that no biological cause of homosexuality exists yet and have yet to be proven<sup>43</sup>. In the same book reference is made to studies about congenital adrenal hyperplasia in women (the excessive secretion of male hormones causing abnormal development of the female sex hormones)<sup>44</sup>.

---

<sup>40</sup> Genetics of Homosexuality ([http://www.godandscience.org/evolution/genetics\\_of\\_homosexuality.html](http://www.godandscience.org/evolution/genetics_of_homosexuality.html) )

<sup>41</sup> Carlson Neil R (2004) *Physiology of Behaviour*. USA: Pearson, p. 326.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid. p. 326.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid.

There appears to be a correlation between these types of women and homosexuality among them – it was concluded that it appears that when a female fetus is exposed to abnormally high levels of androgens (“male hormones”) in the womb they are more inclined to be homosexually orientated during their adult years<sup>45</sup>. This is ascribed to the androgen effect on the development of the brain but the fact that these females develop with changed genitals as a result of all the androgens may also play a role in the sexual orientation of the girl<sup>46</sup>.

This type of research is very relevant as if it would be “proved” that sexual orientation is a genetic trait that one is born with – it would provide reason for people who are in homosexual relationships not to have to give up their sins as they would see it as something they have no control over. This of course could never be proven as God did not create mankind to have homosexual relationships amongst each other.

From all of the studies provided it can clearly be seen that there is no definite logic and pattern followed by scientists who are trying to prove that homosexuality might be a “genetic trait”. It can only be genetic if viewed from a spiritual, Biblical sense in that generational bloodline curses might be responsible for providing legal ground into an individual's or family's lives.

As this type of lifestyle is in direct contrast to God's Word – God clearly condemns it<sup>47</sup> – there has to be some other kind of explanation or reason as to why certain people (sometimes not being able to help themselves) are attracted to the same sex. The reason for this has to do with the demonic realm as perversion of the sexes did not come from God who created mankind. The Bible refers to homosexuality as a **behavior** not an identity<sup>48</sup>.

---

<sup>45</sup> Carlson Neil R (2004) Physiology of Behaviour. USA: Pearson, p. 326.

<sup>46</sup> Ibid. p. 327.

<sup>47</sup> Leviticus 18:22, Leviticus 20:13, Deuteronomy 23:17, 1 Kings 15:12, Romans 1:26-27, 1 Corinthians 6:9, 1 Timothy 1:9-10

<sup>48</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 47.

In conclusion science has not been able to prove that being a homosexual is a genetic trait. Some authors came to the conclusion that homosexuality must be a choice that is made by the individual, which is, in a sense, as will be seen only true once they have heard the truth about their identity from God's Word. Even lesbian writers conclude this<sup>49</sup>. God did not make homosexual people<sup>50, 51</sup>.

According to a report by the Evangelical Alliance's Commission of Unity and Truth among Evangelists (ACUTE)<sup>52</sup>:

***“We have already pointed out a growing acceptance that the definition of homosexual orientation is far from straightforward. A whole range of factors may contribute to it, some of which may not be an individual's responsibility. It is possible that such factors might include a genetic or hormonal variation, which may establish the potential for developing a homosexual orientation. Even so, it is quite wrong to assume any ‘automatic’ causation from genetics. Environmental and behavioural factors must also be taken into account. Some have correlated homosexual orientation to poor relations with parents – especially to poor father-son and mother-daughter relations. Others have argued for a link with sexual and other abuse in childhood and early youth. The extent of these connections is disputed, however, and the difficulties which attend the establishment of firm models for causation only underline the vexed nature of this question. Despite all this, we would emphasise that the actual expression of one's sexual orientation is much more a question of individual choice. The choice may be influenced, or to some degree conditioned, by a mixture of innate potential and bad relational experience.*”**

---

<sup>49</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 45.

<sup>50</sup> Rosenstock-Huessy Eugene, Evans Townsend Colleen. (2006) Sex: Discovering Real Love in a World of Counterfeits. USA: Bordon Books. p. 57.

<sup>51</sup> Lutzer AW Erwin. (2010) The Truth About Same-Sex Marriage. USA: Zondervan Publishing. p. 86.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid. p. 22.

***But it remains subject to choice for the homosexual person, just as, for the heterosexual person, a decision has to be made whether to engage in sexual relations outside marriage. However we define our orientation, we must take responsibility for our actions.”***

In the same report an important point is made<sup>53</sup>:

***“All this confirms that the main point for the church is not to decide whether someone’s orientation towards the same gender is ‘inborn’ or ‘learned’. Nor is it to assess whether that orientation is stable or fluid. Rather it is to deal with how people of whatever orientation in fact behave...Indeed, most Christians struggle with inclinations which may be genetic, or socially constructed, or both, but which are nonetheless defined as sins if we act on them. The problem...is that both within society at large and within the church itself, fewer and fewer people accept that homoerotic sexual practice is in any way wrong.”***

Another author reiterates this point<sup>54</sup>:

***“Instead it [the choice to be homosexual] represents a choice, in some sense, to set one’s desires and satisfy one’s physical drives in a way contrary to God’s appointment and creation...There is no natural homosexuality, for homosexuality is precisely the perversion of nature. Homosexuals are made, not born; their disorder is developed contrary to their God-given identity, learned in opposition to the created order, pursued in defiance of the marriage ordinance.”***

---

<sup>53</sup>Lutzer Erwin W (2004) The Truth about same sex marriage. 6 Things you must know about what’s really at stake. USA: Moody Publishers, p. 24.

<sup>54</sup>Bahnsen Greg L (1978) Homosexuality: a Biblical view. USA: Baker Book House, p. 30.



It is clear from Scripture that homosexuality is a sin and is not approved by God. There can be no doubt as to if God “created it” or approves of it, or whether it is a sin or not. Why then do we find even “Christian” communities who approves of homosexuality or individuals finding that they are attracted to the same sex? The answer lies in the **mind** and the fact that God (and humankind) has a very real enemy on the earth.

Homosexuality is condemned by God and even in the secular realm, there is no “scientific proof” that one can be pronounced “gay”. Yet, to homosexuals, their skewed view of their sexuality is true for them, as well as, all the feelings that go with the same sex attraction. It also seems strange that even Christians – who now call themselves “gay Christians”- would look beyond God’s clear command that homosexuality is a sin and still practise this lifestyle. It seems strange, that if homosexuality is a choice that they would still choose it.

Maybe this has to do with the fact that the feelings that homosexuals feels towards the same sex are very real even though they did not choose to have them. The question now arises as to how it is possible to have feelings towards the same sex if God did not design mankind in this way? The answer lies **in the mind**. A further look into this phenomenon by examining the lifestyle of a homosexual and how they experience their sexuality paves the way to answering the question of what went wrong in the mind of a homosexual in order for them to believe a lie planted by the enemy that would cost them their place in the Kingdom of God.

#### **4. HOMOSEXUALITY AS A LIFESTYLE**

Contrary to the belief that homosexual individuals typically seek out a homosexual relationship, some have an **attraction towards an individual of the same sex**.

**This can be seen** in this comment of a woman once in a heterosexual relationship who left her husband and son for another woman<sup>55</sup>:

***“I never chose these attractions, so why do I have them?”***

The following case study is taken from the book, *Restoring Sexual Identity*, by Anne Paulk where she gives an account of young girl who came to her for help<sup>56</sup>:

***“Megan, a 28 year old Christian woman... had felt attracted to other females on and off since she was 14 years old. To her credit she never acted on those feelings even though she was heavily tempted twice. Instead she “white knuckled” it until her feelings passed or the tempting friendship came to a close. At times the struggle was so difficult she wondered if she would make it without expressing her feelings in some way or another.***

***With great emotion she told me she had been pleading with God, ‘Please, Lord, remove these overwhelming feelings I have toward other women. I don’t understand why I have to go through this agony! Why won’t my sexual temptations toward women just go away?’***

***One particularly difficult relationship took place in high school. Megan had gotten to know Vanessa, a confident, beautiful girl and a strong Christian. By contrast, Megan said, ‘I sat next to Vanessa quietly in class, afraid I might push her away somehow. Soon I began to express only the parts of me that I knew Vanessa liked – my sense of humor, for example – I stopped doing things that didn’t interest Vanessa. I became one-dimensional.***

---

<sup>55</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 36.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid. pp. 14-17.

**Megan recounted watching as boys vied for Vanessa's attentions but hardly seemed to notice her. During visits to Vanessa's home, Megan felt warmly welcomed and included in Vanessa's inner circle of friends. All day long Megan thought about Vanessa, fantasizing about an exclusive relationship and physical touch between them. She looked forward spending time with Vanessa just to get the hugs at the beginning and end of each visit. Eventually Megan's personality had disappeared so much that Vanessa lost interest in her. Megan's unique qualities and independent identity had been traded for closeness with Vanessa. Vanessa had become more than an object of admiration – she had become like an idol.**

**When Megan attended a Christian college, her endurance was tested all the more. During her sophomore year, she became "best friends" with Amy, a fellow nursing student. The two young women did everything together, but a physical temptation didn't surface until one day when Amy made a romantic gesture toward Megan. In that moment, Megan remembered a Bible verse she had learned warning against such activity:**

**"Do you know that the wicked will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived: Neither the sexually immoral nor idolaters nor adulterers nor male prostitutes nor homosexual offenders...will inherit the Kingdom of God (1 Corinthians 6:9-10)"**

**Instantly Megan felt the guilt of her attraction toward Amy. 'How could I do this to you my God?' Megan thought to herself. As a result, she rejected Amy's overture and the two resumed their nonsexual friendship. For the time being Megan felt safe. Megan didn't know what caused or fuelled her attraction to other women.**

***She was tortured by the fact that they were even there. She felt as if she couldn't talk to anyone about it – especially Amy. If only Megan had known that she wasn't alone, that there were others who had successfully faced and overcome feelings just like hers. If only she had felt comfortable bringing to her pastor the struggles that caused her such turmoil. Instead she had received the message that personal weakness, especially in the area of homosexual attraction, would likely be met by an inability to help at best and by labelling and further isolation at worst. Megan said: 'I can't go to my pastor. On the other hand, I feel like I can't go to just any counsellor either. I have read for years in newspapers and magazines that homosexuality is inborn and that people can't change. So what's the use?'***

***Megan broke out of her silence and isolation for the first time...Megan knew change would be difficult but she was excited about it. She responded to the possibility and began to gain hope, confidence, and freedom as she walked through the next six months alongside brothers and sisters in Christ who knew and understood her struggle. [She] made a lot of discoveries that year. 'Well, let's see...'she began. 'This past year I've learned what true accountability is – it's being honest in my small group in the face of attraction, but not to the individual to whom I'm attracted. I've also learned that my sexual attraction toward other women is not simply sexual. It's really a measure of emotional insecurity in my life.'***

This case is typical of a homosexual individual: they are trapped inside of their own mind as a result of isolating themselves from the outside world in response to the fear that anyone would know of the strong, clearly wrong, feelings that they experience inside.

This is true for so many women (and men) and goes even further – some relationships transcend past being just close friendships into fully sexual orientated same sex relationships. Another classical example of a homosexual woman living with her female partner for three years leads as follows<sup>57</sup>:

***“I’m longing for someone else or something else...I’ve spend the past three years thinking I had it all: a lifelong relationship, friends, a good job – but something was missing.”***

These people always feel as if they are “missing something”. They are in very real pain, not only as a result of their wrong sexual orientation, but also as a result of trying out many same sex relationships in the past who more often than not fail.

The question now begs: if God did not create mankind to be homosexual, and the feelings of attraction between two homosexuals are not necessary something they choose (see case study on Megan’s case study), where do these feelings come from?

Anne Paulk, author of *Restoring sexual identity* provides a possible reason for homosexual behaviour. She explains that the first reason for same sex attractions in women comes from an attempt to repair the missing connection with her own gender<sup>58</sup>. This is a result of a severed relationship with her mother at a very young age. A young child seeing her mother being abused or “pushed around” by the father or stepfather concludes that the female is the “weaker sex” that is not able to stand up for themselves<sup>59</sup>. In the mind of the young child, being female is being part of the weaker sex, therefore she rejects her own femininity. Lesbians many times ***hate the fact that they are female*** as it is seen as being the weaker sex<sup>60</sup>.

---

<sup>57</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 20.

<sup>58</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 52.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid. p. 51.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid. P. 53.

As a result of the broken connection with her mother these girls tend to search for a strong female role model whom she could respect<sup>61</sup>. In their belief system men are the stronger, respected and the more valued sex – in their eyes females are not respected and valued<sup>62</sup>. A typical response from a lesbian woman on the conversation of being the weaker sex indicates how she views her role as woman<sup>63</sup>:

***“I didn’t want to be viewed as sex object, property, weak or inferior.”***

In a household where women are seen as sex objects and are subjected to abuse a severe form of misogynistic (hatred for women or the feminine) can develop in the young female child<sup>64</sup>.

In yet another author’s viewpoint on female homosexuality, homosexuality is described as “an attempt to repair the missing connection with their own gender, an attempt to love ourselves<sup>65</sup>.” This view is also held by Dr Elizabeth Moberly on studying **male homosexuals**<sup>66</sup>. Paulk also defines the “lost connection” of lesbian attraction as an “attempt to love and be reunited with the female part of oneself.” She means that that misplaced love can be resolved when a female is reunited with the feminine side of herself – to love herself without projecting that need onto another woman<sup>67</sup>.

Latasha is another interviewee of Paulk and she explains her lesbianism as a result of an angry father sexually and verbally abusing her mother as follows<sup>68</sup>:

---

<sup>61</sup> Ibid.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid. p. 54.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid. p. 52.

<sup>66</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction. USA Harvest House Publishing, p. 52.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid. p.54.

<sup>68</sup> Ibid. pp. 55-56.

**"I felt that I could treat a woman better than a man could – the way a woman should have been treated. I didn't want to identify with the "weaker species", but I wanted to take care of them. I was certain I was born gay because I wanted to be a boy and felt different from the other girls. In junior high school, as the other girls will blooming and changing, my hormones led me to crushes on girls. But by high school, I had entered what I now call my "bisexual stage". I call it that because although I was attracted to girls, I was trying to fit in and I found that I could be attracted to boys physically.**

**Yet following the brief physical attraction, I would be done with them. Girls, on the other hand, made me stutter, get nervous, and wonder to myself, 'what am I going to say and do?' Sometimes straight girls would flirt with me, and I found that really exciting and flirted back. They were just playing with me but I took it very seriously.**

**But it wasn't until college that I decided that men were a waste of my time. 'I am gay', I declared to myself, and I set about looking for a wife, my modified version of the American dream. I don't know what I would have done without being able to define myself as gay. I put my hope in being gay – I would not be destined to duplicate my family's pattern of life."**

This came about as a result of this young girl witnessing abuse against her mother – she vowed to never be as weak and vulnerable as her mother<sup>69</sup>. She **adopted the lifestyle and ways** of the "male" and rejected their own female qualities<sup>70</sup>. Through these examples one can see the underlying theme of women rejecting their own gender as a result of witnessing abuse at a very young age.

---

<sup>69</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 56.

<sup>70</sup> Ibid.

The theme of witnessing abuse or undergoing abuse themselves surfaced in other studies done by Paulk: 60 percent of all former homosexuals have witnessed abuse against a family member while 90 percent experienced some form of abuse themselves<sup>71</sup>. In terms of the types of abuse she found that: 70 percent was emotional abuse, 60 percent sexual abuse and more than 50 percent were abused verbally<sup>72</sup>. A report by Dr Stanton Jones stated that “experience of sexual abuse as a child, in other words, more than tripled the likelihood of later reporting homosexual orientation.” Which is in contrast to what Richard Deem found in his research: in an article by *Pandora’s Project*, a project providing support and resources for survivors of rape and sexual abuse, it was found that there is not necessarily a direct correlation between childhood abuse and the eventual homosexual lifestyle that follows<sup>73</sup>. These two conflicting views deem some more insight into what the effects of abuse are.

## **5. THE ROLE OF ABUSE IN HOMOSEXUALITY**

According to research on childhood trauma in lesbians: 60% of all homosexual women interviewed witnessed some form of abuse against a family member and 90% experienced some form of abuse themselves<sup>74</sup>. Three core beliefs are influenced by abuse in childhood: the sense of self, relationships, and the ability to trust others<sup>75</sup>. Victims of abuse frequently experience feelings of shame, guilt, isolation, powerlessness, embarrassment and inadequacy – many times they even blame themselves for the abuse<sup>76</sup>. The results of abuse or witnessing abuse have devastating effects on the individual as it influences almost every aspect of their lives.

---

<sup>71</sup>Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 56.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid. p. 57.

<sup>73</sup>Pandora’s Project: Support and resources for survivors of rape and sexual abuse.  
(<http://www.pandys.org/articles/abuseandhomosexuality.html>)

<sup>74</sup> Ibid. p.52.

<sup>75</sup>Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 58.

<sup>76</sup> Ibid.



In the opening chapter of his book *Homosexual no more*, Dr Consiglio<sup>77</sup> sheds light on the “inner world” of the homosexual:

- They feel “different” from a young age
- Unsure of themselves
- Less confident than others
- Have fear and anxiety
- They are overly sensitive
- Alone and self-conscious
- Constantly compare themselves with others and feels that they fall short
- Self-critical, self-condemning, self-judging
- They don’t feel worthwhile, significant, or really important to anyone
- They Feel like they were not understood or accepted
- They started a life of hiding, pretending, denying, and covering up the real inside of themselves with a false, protective and substitute self
- Moved out of childhood with large parts of themselves buried, unsettled or lost
- Remained fixed and unfinished in childhood
- Especially feels shame – a feeling of being incomplete or having failed at being a person
- Sense that a part of themselves is not good enough or adequate
- Shame tells them that they should be something better or different than who they are
- They experience guilt on a large scale

According to Dr Gonsiglio, children experiencing these feelings hide from themselves, they pretend that these feelings do not exist<sup>78</sup>.

---

<sup>77</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) *Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality*. USA: SP Publications, pp. 9-10.

<sup>78</sup> Ibid. p. 10.

For a child this has devastating effects as “they are what they feel” – implicating that if they choose to hide their feelings in this way, it would be akin to **them** not existing<sup>79</sup>. These children become empty and start to exist as an “empty person” inside. In this way their feelings sometimes do not match their age, they do not trust their feelings as they are unacceptable to the individual<sup>80</sup>.

As a result the person does not trust themselves and they do not let any other person know who they really are<sup>81</sup> and now, self-rejection starts to take place<sup>82</sup>. From these descriptions it is clear that the internal world of a homosexual is not what God had in mind for His children when he said:

***“For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.”***

***2 Timothy 1:7***

According to the Word of God one is to have a sound mind, not like what Dr Consiglio describes in his analysis of the inner world of the homosexual. This inner world gives an understanding into what homosexuals believe about themselves, these “feelings” or beliefs create a world opposite to what God meant for it to be inside of themselves. Another sign of abuse is that these victims constantly feel that they have to “save” others that are hurting. A lesbian woman abused in her childhood writes<sup>83</sup>:

***“Maybe it’s also an abuse thing. When your boundaries have been violated, you just plainly stop seeing the space between people, so people’s pain becomes your pain and you have to stop it.***

---

<sup>79</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: SP Publications, p. 10.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid. p. 10.

<sup>81</sup> Ibid.

<sup>82</sup> Ibid.

<sup>83</sup> Ibid. p.59.

***At the same time, though, co-dependency is also a distancing ploy; you're so busy trying to save the world out there you forget about the people close to you, and then, last of all, or first of all, you forget about yourself, that you might be the one worth saving."***

She concludes that childhood trauma and abuse "writes on the heart and soul of the female child what seem to be indelible messages about her sense of self, her relationships, and her ability to trust others<sup>84</sup>." Victims of abuse do not often get rid of the shame, guilt, isolation, powerlessness, embarrassment or inadequacy it produces as one victim explains<sup>85</sup>:

***"I was an abused kid. This is something I have chosen not to dwell on in my public life...So yes, I had been abused, although the details are not important. What is important is that I had, supposedly, dealt with the fallout in therapy. How wrong I was. Abuse is an on-going saga for everyone who has lived through it. It may start and stop in real time, but in mind time it goes on forever."***

What is interesting is the compulsion this same victim of abuse felt towards others who were also abused:

***"To put it bluntly, I have no boundaries. Zero, nada, zippo – none...I am in constant saviour mode...it's a compulsion, I can't help myself...Maybe it's an abuse thing. When your boundaries have been violated, you just plain and simple stop seeing space between people, so people's pain becomes your pain and you have to stop it."***

---

<sup>84</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) *Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality*. USA: SP Publications, p. 58.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid.

***At the same time, though, co-dependency is also a distancing ploy; you're so busy trying to save the world out there that you forget about the people close to you, and then, last of all, or first of all, you forget about yourself, that you might be the one worth saving<sup>86</sup>.***

One can see that as a result of abuse or witnessing abuse, the inner world of a homosexual is shaped in a way that skews their reality towards themselves, towards others and the world around them. They are at war with themselves, they are constantly insecure and fearful. They experience a lot of rejection as a result of them rejecting themselves.

What is very interesting is that they identify with others' pain as a result of their own, they then try to "save" the other person and as a result of not having boundaries themselves and this leads to unbalanced and unhealthy relationships. The effects of abuse are devastating. As a result of rejecting their gender, these feelings, coupled with the "lost connection" and "something being missing" leaves the homosexual constantly searching for love and their lost connection in same sex relationships.

This of course, can be found freely by the love that God offered through sending His Son to the world to die for their sins. By doing this, God demonstrated His great love for the human race. And it is by accepting this love that one can be healed from these emotional wounds and rejection as will be seen throughout the remainder of this chapter.

As was seen, childhood abuse or witnessing abuse at a young age can lead to a girl rejecting their own "female self" early on<sup>87</sup>, the same goes for boys. This could also lead to Gender Identity Disorder (GID) in which the male or female child rejects their own gender and adopts the attributes and interests of the opposite gender<sup>88</sup>.

---

<sup>86</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 59.

<sup>87</sup> Ibid.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid. p. 60.

They [GID disorder individuals] develop “an inflexible, compulsive, persistent and rigidly stereotyped pattern<sup>89</sup>”, these girls constantly adopt the male role and never identify with being “mother” during childhood play or development, they deliberately chose being the “Daddy” in role playing or would rather climb trees or ride bikes (engage in more masculine activities) than adopting the “female role” during childhood<sup>90</sup>. The next section describes this phenomenon.

## 6. GENDER IDENTITY DISORDER

Another way in which Satan attacks the sexuality of a person can be seen in Gender Identity Disorder (GID). This disorder is recognized by medical professionals and is classified by the ICD-10 CM<sup>91</sup>. GID is also known as gender dysphoria and describes individuals who “experience significant dysphoria (discontent) with the sex that they were assigned at birth and/or the gender roles associated with that sex<sup>92</sup>. One can immediately pick up the **perversion of the mind** as opposed to what God intended for these individuals.

Affected individuals are referred to as **transsexual or transgender**<sup>93</sup>. Causes of this condition are mainly ascribed to biosocial factors<sup>94</sup>. These individuals are “treated” by undergoing surgery in order to change their sex in order for them to “match” their gender identity, in this way this disorder is seen as a medical problem that is corrected with surgery<sup>95</sup>.

---

<sup>89</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 61.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid.

<sup>91</sup> ICD= International Classification of Diseases is “a standard diagnostic tool for epidemiology, health management and clinical purposes” and is designed as a health care classification system that provides a system of diagnostic codes for classifying diseases: ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/International\\_Statistical\\_Classification\\_of\\_Diseases\\_and\\_Related\\_Health\\_Problems](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/International_Statistical_Classification_of_Diseases_and_Related_Health_Problems))

<sup>92</sup> Gender Identity Disorder. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender\\_identity\\_disorder](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender_identity_disorder))

<sup>93</sup> Ibid.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid.

<sup>95</sup> Ibid.

Treating GID may comprise of a combination of factors that includes surgery (“sex change” such as hormonal treatments, genital surgery, electrolysis and laser hair removal, chest/breast surgery or other cosmetic surgeries) and psychological counselling for lifestyle changes – these treatments are typically combined as it is well-known that psychological counselling alone is not effective<sup>96</sup>.

One can only imagine the relational implications that such a change to ones gender would have in a family. The confusion that will prevail amongst children who now have to deal with a mother or a father undergoing a “sex-change” and now considers themselves the other sex in the family. The effect of this onslaught on the mind, like so many others, not only affects the individual but has a ripple effect to all involved and has the power to destroy families.

Another proposed cause for GID is given as of Biological origin<sup>97</sup>. It is believed that genetic variation, hormones and differences in brain functioning and brain structures have been seen as causes for GID<sup>98</sup>. According to studies there is a correlation between GID in children and GID in adults (transsexualism) as well as with homosexuality in adults<sup>99</sup>.

In extensive research done by Zucker and Bradley it was found that **biological research has not proved very effective** in explaining the origin or cause of GID<sup>100</sup>. Their research included considerations from the fields or content in the fields of behavioural genetics, molecular genetics, prenatal sex hormones, maternal stress, neuropsychology, neuroanatomy and physical anthropometry<sup>101</sup>.

---

<sup>96</sup> Gender Identity Disorder. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender\\_identity\\_disorder](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender_identity_disorder))

<sup>97</sup> Ibid.

<sup>98</sup> Ibid.

<sup>99</sup> Zucker KJ, Bradley SJ (1995) Gender Identity Disorder and Psychosexual problems in Children and Adolescents. NY: The Guilford Press, p. 125.

<sup>100</sup> Ibid. p. 126.

<sup>101</sup> Ibid. p. 197.

The results were inconclusive to prove the biological cause of GID. Other considerations also proving ineffective in proving a biological cause for GID were studies on “between group differences” in cognitive abilities, sibling sex ratio, birth order, temperament and physical attractiveness<sup>102</sup>. In other words, in the same way that no genetic or biological origin can be found to explain homosexuality, no biological reason can be found for GID. Out of the many studies done not one could indicate that “God made man this way”.

Their psychosocial research concluded as follows<sup>103</sup>:

***“Our review suggests that some psychosocial factors (e.g. parents’ prenatal sex preference) have little to do with the development of gender disorder in children. On the other hand, the evidence seems stronger for other psychosocial influences, such as social reinforcement. The role of familial psychopathology also appears important to study further, since the evidence seems to be shifting in the direction of more psychopathology in the families of normal children. However, the problem of specificity has not been resolved, and future work will have to address this issue. As in research on biological influences, much of the variance remains unaccounted for. Models of risk need to be psychosocial factors to the genesis and maintenance of gender identity disorder in children.”***

Their results regarding the psychophysiological aspect are inconclusive while other research indicates that the psychological aspect plays an immense role in the development of GID. GID is diagnosed according to the Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders and has been classified as a disorder on its own, not with the other sexual disorders<sup>104</sup>.

---

<sup>102</sup> Zucker KJ, Bradley SJ (1995) Gender Identity Disorder and Psychosexual problems in Children and Adolescents. NY: The Guilford Press, p. 125.

<sup>103</sup> Ibid. p. 255.

<sup>104</sup> Gender Identity Disorder. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender\\_identity\\_disorder](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender_identity_disorder))

Other studies, as will be seen, reiterates the importance of the family model and the relationships residing in this model in the development of GID.

The following behaviours signalling a strong psychological identification with the opposite sex can be seen in children with GID<sup>105, 106</sup>:

- **Identity statements:** the children would typically maintain that they are members of the opposite sex despite being corrected<sup>107</sup> - they explicitly believe that they are not of the sex they were biologically born with and their cross-dressed type of behavior confirms this
- **Dress-up play – cross-dressing:** between the ages of 2-3 a boy will typically dress up in their mothers' shoes, dresses, jewelry and make-up<sup>108</sup>. These children will insist on wearing clothes of the opposite sex outside of role-playing into the normal "everyday life". They will become agitated if clothes of the opposite sex are not available to them and will even in later childhood when choosing clothes avoid more "masculine" clothing (like batman, superman, powerrangers etc.) and chose more female like clothes like pink or purple to wear<sup>109</sup>. Girls of a young age will typically chose more masculine clothes and would prefer to cut their hair short for a more "masculine look"<sup>110</sup>
- **Toy and Role play:** Boys tend to choose the feminine roles like their mother, sister or female characters in films like *The Little Mermaid* or *Snow White*<sup>111</sup>. They tend not to present the "nurturing role" of the mother or female during role play but rather to dress and undress Barbie dolls and comb their hair.

---

<sup>105</sup> Zucker KJ, Bradley SJ (1995) Gender Identity Disorder and Psychosexual problems in Children and Adolescents. NY: The Guilford Press, p. 11.

<sup>106</sup> Child Healing: Strengthening Families. Gender Identity Disorder and Transsexual Issues: (<http://www.childhealing.com/articles/genderidentitydisorder.php>)

<sup>107</sup> Zucker KJ, Bradley SJ (1995) Gender Identity Disorder and Psychosexual problems in Children and Adolescents. NY: The Guilford Press, p. 14.

<sup>108</sup> Ibid. p.15.

<sup>109</sup> Ibid.

<sup>110</sup> Ibid.

<sup>111</sup> Ibid. p. 16.



Girls on the other hand, would rather identify with more masculine figures like their brothers or dad's and play more violent games and choose to identify with male characters in movies<sup>112</sup>.

- **Peer relations:** Boys typically show a strong affiliation for girls as playmates but tend to become socially isolated and typically have no close friends of either sex<sup>113</sup>. Girls will have boys as playmates but will take on a "bossy" role in her relationships with boys or other girls<sup>114</sup>. Boys would typically not participate in "rough-and-tumble" activities as they do not distinguish between play and the intent to hurt<sup>115</sup>.
- **Motoric and speech characteristics:** Boys may typically assume more feminine "mannerisms" like flexing the elbow and letting the wrist go limp and speak in a more feminine voice whereas girls would display more masculine body movements like larger strides and lowering her voice to sound more masculine<sup>116</sup>.
- **Statements about sexual anatomy:** Some boys would sit and urinate instead of standing like a male, or they would hide their genitalia between their legs and announce that they are girls and thereby communicate their dissatisfaction in their own gender<sup>117</sup>. Likewise, girls would have a preoccupation with acquiring a penis<sup>118</sup>.
- **Involvement in rough-and-tumble play:** Boys dislike getting involved in rough-and-tumble play or any type of "aggressive sport" and some of them have a phobic-like reaction to aggressive language and they refuse to swear whereas girls would be seen to participate in more "rough" boyish activities<sup>119</sup>.

---

<sup>112</sup> Zucker KJ, Bradley SJ (1995) Gender Identity Disorder and Psychosexual problems in Children and Adolescents. NY: The Guilford Press, p. 17.

<sup>113</sup> Ibid.

<sup>114</sup> Ibid. pp. 17-18.

<sup>115</sup> Ibid. p. 19.

<sup>116</sup> Ibid. p. 21.

<sup>117</sup> Ibid.

<sup>118</sup> Ibid. p. 22.

<sup>119</sup> Ibid.

The children are seen to be “distressed” about their own gender and are frequently seen to be engaging in sex-typed behaviours more characteristic of the opposite sex<sup>120, 121</sup>. This is not normal as God did not create one to have an innate disgust for ones’ own identity.

The onset of GID is between the ages of 2-4 years and children may even start to “cross-dress” before this age with clothes or shoes of the opposite sex: this is especially seen in boys who form an “obsession” with their mothers’ shoes for instance<sup>122</sup>. This “phase” becomes a problem once the child does not “outgrow” this behaviour after getting older. One can clearly see, the problem arises in the mind at a very young age. It seems like psychological reasons are mostly given for the development of GID.

Another source accounts GID to a fear of rejection, when boys are not good at playing sports they will rather seek the attention of female friends where they then identify strongly with their female friends and GID might develop<sup>123</sup>. The absence of a father role model can also contribute to the male child not wanting to identify with his own sex (as he lost all confidence in his father) and this might lead to confusion of the male identity within himself<sup>124</sup>. Neglect from the father to his son may also lead to the son wanting to be like his sisters in order to also gain acceptance from his father<sup>125</sup>. Emotional and physical abuse from a boys’ father can lead to a wrong mental model of masculinity of men being cruel and insensitive and this could also lead to the rejection masculinity and the adoption of a feminine identity<sup>126</sup>.

---

<sup>120</sup> Zucker KJ, Bradley SJ (1995) Gender Identity Disorder and Psychosexual problems in Children and Adolescents. NY: The Guilford Press, p. 11.

<sup>121</sup> Hallman Janelle (2008) The Heart of Female Same Sex Attraction: A comprehensive Counseling resource. USA: IVP Books, pp. 77-82.

<sup>122</sup> Zucker KJ, Bradley SJ (1995) Gender Identity Disorder and Psychosexual problems in Children and Adolescents. NY: The Guilford Press, p. 11.

<sup>123</sup> Child Healing: Strengthening Families. Gender Identity Disorder and Transsexual Issues: (<http://www.childhealing.com/articles/genderidentitydisorder.php>)

<sup>124</sup> Ibid.

<sup>125</sup> Ibid.

<sup>126</sup> Ibid.

Male boys being very artistic can also lead to an over identification with the female identity that might lead to GID<sup>127</sup>. Self-rejection and self-hatred as a result of a poor body image (like being too thin or small in body stature) could also lead a male child to think that he might be happier in a female body<sup>128</sup>.

The same reason accounts for GID in women: in order to please her father the girl might become more athletic<sup>129</sup>. They also propose that failure of the girl to identify with her mother can lead to GID or the rejection of her own female counterparts<sup>130</sup>. In the same way as young boys some girls may develop a distaste for their own bodies and reject everything feminine<sup>131</sup>. Severe rejection by their fathers or even abuse is also given as a reason for the development of GID in girls; they experience their fathers as abusive instead of them validating them as a woman which can then lead to GID<sup>132</sup>.

One can clearly see from these reasons given for the development of GID that it is purely as a relational problem that originates as a result of a pathological mother or father relationship with a child. Some other relational origins, such as rejection by ones' own peers are also indicative of a relational origin of GID.

In 2003 Drs Zucker and Bradley did a study that evaluated the parents of children with GID and found that mothers and fathers of children with GID presented with an unusually high rate of depression, bipolar disorder and depression with substance abuse disorders respectively<sup>133</sup>. From their studies, these experts on GID concluded that maternal psychopathology correlated strongly with behaviour problems in boys with GID<sup>134</sup>.

---

<sup>127</sup> Child Healing: Strengthening Families. Gender Identity Disorder and Transsexual Issues: (<http://www.childhealing.com/articles/genderidentitydisorder.php>)

<sup>128</sup> Ibid.

<sup>129</sup> Ibid.

<sup>130</sup> Ibid.

<sup>131</sup> Ibid.

<sup>132</sup> Ibid.

<sup>133</sup> Zucker K, Bradley, S. et al. (2003). Psychopathology in parents of boys with gender identity disorder. J. Amer. Acad. Of Child & Adolesc. Psychiatry 42: 2-4

<sup>134</sup> Child Healing: Strengthening Families. Gender Identity Disorder and Transsexual Issues: (<http://www.childhealing.com/articles/genderidentitydisorder.php>)

A quote from Dr Bradley<sup>135</sup> confirms this:

**“..... boys with GID appear to believe that they will be more valued by their families or that they will get in less trouble as girls than as boys. These beliefs are related to parents’ experiences within their families of origin especially tendencies on the part of mothers to be frightened by male aggression or to be in need of nurturing, which they perceive as a female characteristic.”**

From the research the influence of parents and parenting can be seen in the development of GID. In other words, in the case of GID, Satan uses the mind at a very young age to direct it away from God’s intended love for them through their parents and places strongholds in their mind about the opposite and the same sex.

The influence that Satan exerted on the mind in the case of GID gives the individual the deceptive message that “my gender is not good enough, it is distasteful to me and others”. In this way he succeeds in manipulating the individual to **rejecting their gender** given to them by God. This belief is so strong that these individuals will undergo surgery to “correct” what they think is wrong and repulsive. God created man perfectly in His Image – they were made to be loved and cared for exactly as God made them. Satan succeeds in destroying the victims of GID’s relationship with themselves and at the same time ruin and destroy the family unit as a result of these people not accepting who they are and were made to be by undergoing all sorts of physical changes in their body.

Like in the case of GID, it really is not a “sexual problem” at all. It has to do with the perversion of the mind into believing something other than what God intended. In the same way, although the stigma around homosexuality is that it is all about sex, it really is not the case.

---

<sup>135</sup> Affect Regulation and the Development of Psychopathology, NY: Guilford Press, 2003, p. 201-202.

Very interestingly Dr Consiglio means that homosexuality has very little to do with sex and much more to do with “an emotional and psychological wound which leaves the person feeling deprived, empty, unfulfilled, and incomplete in the bonding that they needed to experience with the same gender parent<sup>136</sup>. Furthermore, he feels overwhelmed, victimized, and short on self-esteem. The sexual aspect of homosexuality is an attempt to meet the love and intimacy need which were never adequately formed between the child and the same sex parent. As such, it is really not a sexual problem at all. It is only sexual in how it relates to the intimacy needs that sexuality symbolizes<sup>137</sup>.

The perversion of the mind thus drives the sexual behaviour of the homosexual! Wrong beliefs, emotional needs and insecurity are what really empower homosexuals to search out the parts of themselves that are “missing” from their relationship with same sex partners. Where does this emotional need come from? If God did not create a homosexual to have these emotional needs and dependencies, where does it come from? The next section explores these questions.

## **7. PARENT CHILDHOOD RELATIONSHIPS IN HOMOSEXUALITY**

The role of parents in the correct and healthy development of a child cannot be over emphasized:

***“Parents have a tremendous influence on the formation of a child’s self-perception...We must understand that children are born in a completely dependent state. They need not only food, shelter, and clothing, but attention, acceptance, approval, and affection. They need these emotional supplies as much as they need food and water. They have no other source for these supplies. They need them from their own parents.”***

---

<sup>136</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: SP Publications, p. 37.

<sup>137</sup> Ibid. p. 38.

The child needs to go through different developmental stages to achieve a healthy image of themselves. During the very first years of life the child is solely dependent on their caregivers but more specifically their mother. The child needs to learn that the mother is trustworthy and reliable in terms of providing for the child's needs, like food, drink, diaper change etc. The child also needs to learn to come to a relatively accurate view of themselves and the world around them which will result in trust. The mother is to provide a sense of love and security as well as to promote autonomy within the child.

As with the case of lesbianism forming later in life several "causes" of emotional deprivation are mentioned. If a mother is not emotionally available to the child or chooses not to let the child develop as an "own person" but treat them as "split off parts of themselves" they never develop into mature stable women in their own right<sup>138</sup>. The mother in essence needs to provide the daughter with a source of love necessary to "grow into" her own female identity<sup>139</sup>. During the developmental years the father-daughter relationship provides for the female sense of worth through appreciation and adoration<sup>140</sup>. The father communicates a message of "being a woman" to his daughter<sup>141</sup>.

Another cause mentioned is personality temperament – if the daughter greatly differs from the mother – if she is more aggressive or athletic than a mother who is more timid and the mother struggles to accept her daughter that way there might develop a "love deficit" in the daughter that might later make her vulnerable to becoming a lesbian<sup>142</sup>.

---

<sup>138</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, pp. 66-67.

<sup>139</sup> Ibid. p. 69.

<sup>140</sup> Ibid. p. 68.

<sup>141</sup> Ibid. p. 68.

<sup>142</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 69.

This important point is reiterated in her book *The Heart of Female Same Sex Attraction* in which Janelle Hallman describes that as a result of not bonding with her mother a young girls' future will be affected<sup>143</sup>. She needs to form an attachment bond with her mother before moving "out of her mother's world" and becoming "daddy's girl". In this loving, secure environment of a loving bond between mother and daughter the girl will develop a sense of self, mirror, model and identify with her mother, will come to understand herself as a female, differentiate and discover her unique and individual identity and learn how to do relationship<sup>144</sup>.

This mother-daughter relationship is to serve as the "template" for all future emotional relationships. One can see the result of severing or interfering with a loving relationship between mother and daughter as God ordained for it to be. By damaging this relationship very early on she never develops an identity. This is why woman who have a same sex attraction that resulted from a non-nurturing relationship with their mothers will constantly have felt that their very personhood (identity) was under attack.

As a result of these insecurities these girls will from a young age develop different "coping mechanisms" for self-preservation such as distancing tactics and detachment behaviours that will later contribute to even more attachment difficulties<sup>145</sup>. She is set up for a **life of failing relationships** as she does not know how to properly connect to the world around her. How tragic to attack human kind in a way that will set them up for a life of failure and disappointment as a result of wrong messages about themselves, as a result of emotional deprivation, being planted in the mind at such a young age.

These individuals now have strongholds in their mind about their identity and will develop coping mechanisms to protect themselves from the outside world.

---

<sup>143</sup> Hallman Janelle (2008) *The Heart of Female Same Sex Attraction: A comprehensive Counseling resource*. USA: IVP Books, p. 63.

<sup>144</sup> Ibid.

<sup>145</sup> Ibid.

Sadly, these coping mechanisms many times are to “detach” themselves from emotional connections. One of the first “detachment” coping mechanisms for these girls is *defensive detachment* in which they actively detach from their relationship with their mothers – they literally “cut off” from any emotional attachment from their mothers<sup>146</sup>. This detachment is further explained as follows<sup>147</sup>:

***“Like attachment, defensive attachment does not occur in a single isolated moment, it is a progressive, patterned response within a girl to her ongoing dissatisfaction in her relationship with her mom. [They] detached not necessarily from fear of abuse of physical harm from mom, but rather because they feared being engulfed or being met with nothingness or causal disinterest. These girls could no longer endure this painful disappointment.”***

Another result of a primary caregiving bond not created by mother and daughter is disidentification. Disidentification is not merely the result of breakdown in a girl’s identification process, but it is also an ongoing reaction against “mother”<sup>148</sup>. She might disown or not associate with anything that her mother likes or does, even reject her mothers’ sense of fashion. In this way women with homosexual tendencies might react with disgust toward anything feminine<sup>149</sup>. We can again see the rejection of ones gender as was the case with GID.

In the same way a girl will either be extremely close or extremely distant from their fathers. They might have, as a result of the emotional detachment and insecurity resulting from a defective attachment with the mother, also experience their fathers as ***distant or unemotionally involved***<sup>150</sup>.

---

<sup>146</sup> Hallman Janelle (2008) *The Heart of Female Same Sex Attraction: A comprehensive Counseling resource.* USA: IVP Books, p. 65.

<sup>147</sup> Ibid. p. 66.

<sup>148</sup> Ibid. p. 67.

<sup>149</sup> Ibid. p. 67.

<sup>150</sup> Ibid. p. 64.



The result of these girls experiencing their fathers as absent or emotionally uninvolved has a myriad of implications for them later in their life. If the father was emotionally abusive to his wife, the mother of the young child would not have been emotionally available to the young child thereby severing the relationship between mother and daughter<sup>151</sup>.

By not having a loving father (or rather by experiencing him in this way as a result of her own emotional disconnectedness) the young girl was denied the significance experience of ever emotionally connecting or interacting with a man. Instead he was viewed as unknown or undesirable, he was often depersonalized, perceived as weak, irrelevant or useless and consequently ignored<sup>152</sup>. Also, the belief was established in her mind that she, as a woman, was insignificant to a man – or that she did not matter<sup>153</sup>. This has implications later in life when she will have to choose a husband – she will find it difficult to trust and accept a man in her life.

All of these factors thus established a certain belief pattern within the mind of the young child that they are not able to overcome on their own. They view the world as being hostile in which they are unable to form emotional connections with other people. As a result of these primary relationships not being in place or being perceived as “unsafe” it sets the individual up for a lifetime of wrong relationships and emotional pain. They are unable to go through the normal stages of emotional development and their predicament is summarized as follows<sup>154</sup>:

***“...a daughter’s core sense of self will gradually emerge as she continues in a warm and empathetic relationship with mom. However her emerging self needs to differentiate and become a unique, individuated self, not merely a appendage of mother.***

---

<sup>151</sup> Hallman Janelle (2008) *The Heart of Female Same Sex Attraction: A comprehensive Counseling resource.* USA: IVP Books, p. 69.

<sup>152</sup> Ibid.

<sup>153</sup> Ibid.

<sup>154</sup> Ibid. p. 69-70

**To gain this sense of autonomy or differentiation (within an ongoing attachment of mom), a girl is utterly dependent on the involvement of an attuned father who will notice, validate, affirm and support the delineation of her personhood and healthy individuation.**

**If a girls' basic sense of trust or attachment to either parent is disrupted, her individuation process can break down. In instances where a daughter is not securely or affectionately attached to mom or disengaged from the identification or mirroring process, a father's affirmation will be limited. A daughter's active detachment and disidentification with mom creates more of a submerging or vanishing self than a vital and unique personhood. There may simple be a lack of an emerging or developing self to affirm.**

**In instances where a daughter is not securely or affectionately attached to dad or disengaged from the affirmation and differentiation process, a mother's loving influence will be limited. Those parts of a daughter's self that are being found or identified within her mother may become inextricably merged, so to speak, or lost within her mother's personhood and identity instead of being recognized as her own distinctive characteristics and traits. Indeed many women with SSA [same sex-attraction] suffer from having never completed this psychological and emotional differentiation process. Their ongoing existence is unconsciously felt to be still dependant on their mothers (from whom they are possibly consciously or unconsciously detaching and disidentifying due to core anxiety within the "insecure attachment") and to be utterly independent of their fathers, who are not available, appropriately affectionate or truly known. They remain arrested within the developmental stages of dependency and differentiation, and are therefore simply not able to secure their own self or true identity."**

This a very alarming statement – this means, as a result of these mental models instilled in the mind, lesbians never have their own true identity – all as a result of not receiving or going through the correct developmental stages. The following passage gives some insight into the inner life of the lesbian<sup>155</sup>:

***“Many women with same sex-attraction have a history of controlling self-expression and self-assertion, measuring how much they will reveal to others in any given situation. They unconsciously control what or how much they feel, relying on numerous defence mechanisms to avoid uncomfortable or overwhelming feelings, especially anxiety and shame. They may control or moderate their felt needs, desires and expectations, guarding themselves for more disappointment or shame. They have also unconsciously controlled their own identification process, eliminating potential role models (like mother) and selecting, often by default, with whom they will identify.”***

God wants to give each and every human being a sense of self who they are through identification with His love as His beloved children. This passage demonstrates how by establishing wrong thinking about oneself can destroy the sense of self but also sets one up for a life time of wrong relational choices and pathways into homosexuality. This means that homosexuality is, in fact, ***rooted in the mind*** and should be dealt with there. These women are literally locked up in their own world of protective mechanisms without a sense of self or the ability to reach out to others for healthy connections. Many times, they themselves are not aware that this is the problem. They do not realize that their beliefs about themselves, their homosexual tendencies towards others of the same sex and their severe insecurity is all a result of the enemy interfering with what God intended for them to have and plating lies wherever he could.

---

<sup>155</sup> Hallman Janelle (2008) *The Heart of Female Same Sex Attraction: A comprehensive Counseling resource*. USA: IVP Books, p. 182.

They go through life, without a sense of self, not knowing who they really are and live in constant isolation most of the time. Here the enemy is able to plant more lies and deepen the bondage that they are in. Their emotional pain is deeply rooted and covered under layers of self-made protective mechanisms, like detachment. As a result of their beliefs that were established in their minds, these women many times severely reject themselves as they were (and are) unable to experience love or emotional closeness with anyone except through the pathological bonds that they form with members of the same sex.

Of course, since their foundational relationship with themselves is not in order they are unable to establish any other relationships or even reach out to loving relationships that could help and heal them and in this way they remain in bondage. Jesus Christ came to the earth to redeem mankind from sin and to proclaim freedom to the captives! It is not God's will for any of his children to be in such deep bondage of the enemy.

The enemy is able to use fear as a way to establish pathological belief systems. Emotional abandonment during the very early years of life is **terrifying** to a young child<sup>156</sup>:

***“Children experience panic at the thought of the loss of or withdrawal of a parent’s approval. It is even more intense than the fear of death. It is the experience of losing their existence...as if they had never existed at all. This is referred to as annihilation anxiety.”***

One can see that if a child feels that he or she is being abandoned – **fear** – sets in. It is based on this principle that mind programming and mind control works which is the premise of the next chapter.

---

<sup>156</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 67.

Another danger of the attack on the mind during the early years of life is that an individual will experience God in the same way that they do their abandoning earthly mothers or fathers. So not only does the interruption of the development process through the mind set one up for a lifetime of wrong choices and sin, but can also damage ones relationship with ones Loving Creator.

Homosexual individuals thinking in this way may also feel that God is cursing them for their sin and condemning them for who they are<sup>157</sup>. It is these deceptions that need to be dealt with in order to restore the homosexual to a loving relationship with God. One can see how establishing hurtful and untrue strongholds in the mind can drive people away from their Creator. In the Bible God portrays Himself as a Loving Father Who wants to nurture, protect, teach, love and care for His creation, especially His children. His heart towards His children can be seen in countless verses in the Bible one of which is found in Jeremiah:

***“The LORD appeared to us in the past, saying: I have loved you with an everlasting love; I have drawn you with unfailing kindness.”***

***Jeremiah 31:3***

As a result of not being able to experience the true love that God offers, homosexuals will miss out on this relationship with God the Father as a result of the “image” created in their minds by the enemy of their earthly parents. This has catastrophic implications for the individual as they are unable to connect with their Source of Life and reason for existence. But praise be to God, He sent His Son to redeem mankind out of bondage into His glorious Kingdom of Light. Through the working of the Holy Spirit those stuck in this bondage and captivity can be set free through the finished work of the Cross of Jesus Christ.

---

<sup>157</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: Scripture Press Publications, p. 59.

The **lack of love** during the developmental years forms the basis for the homosexual problem and is the root cause of a poor self-image and low self-esteem<sup>158</sup>. To be more specific, the aspects of love that were missing in the developmental childhood years of the homosexual were: approval, acceptance, being valued, worthwhile, cherished, being special and important<sup>159</sup>. **This aspect is what draws them to the same gender**<sup>160</sup>. Therefore the answer to healing for the homosexual is love presented in a mature healthy relationship<sup>161</sup> as Dr Consiglio<sup>162</sup> states:

***“Homosexuality primarily develops out of the early childhood experience of a poorly established love-bonding relationship with the parent of the same gender. This seems to be the most critical factor which gives rise to homosexuality. It thus arises from a learnt experience. Sometimes a person might be more vulnerable to homosexuality because of predisposing factors.***

***Some of these might be chromosomal complexities or a certain sensitive temperament***<sup>163</sup>. ***None of these predispositions alone or together form a homosexual orientation.***

***What is always seen are other environmental or developmental factors such as the behaviour of the other sex parent, medical handicaps, or problems, the impact of the birth order, sibling sex ratios, dysfunctional family relationships, early sexual abuse or exploitation, emotional abuse and rejection, dissatisfying peer relationships***<sup>164</sup>.”

---

<sup>158</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: SP Publications, p. 51.

<sup>159</sup> Ibid.

<sup>160</sup> Ibid.

<sup>161</sup> Ibid.

<sup>162</sup> Ibid. p. 58.

<sup>163</sup> Ibid.

<sup>164</sup> Ibid. p. 59.

These factors results in emotional wounding that leaves the child with low self-esteem and gender emptiness, a gender identity insecurity or inadequacy<sup>165</sup>. Dr Consiglio<sup>166</sup> gives the solution to homosexuality:

***“The solution is inner healing of that emotional woundedness which brings strength and gender wholeness to the inner man, reducing and eliminating the homosexual need and allowing heterosexual feelings to emerge<sup>167</sup>.”***

In other words, he is saying that in dealing with the mind and resolving the strongholds that were placed there by the enemy, would provide the answer to dealing with homosexuality. The importance of **love** in the reintegration of all of these cases becomes the main theme when counselling people who think themselves to be homosexual. This fact is reiterated by Janelle Hallman<sup>168</sup>, author of the book: *The heart of Female Same-Sex Attraction*, when she writes about resolving homosexuality:

***“Karen entered therapy because she was despondent over the recent breakup of a three-year relationship with a female partner. She said that each time she broke up with a partner, she felt like her heart was being ripped out of her chest. She feared she was losing parts of herself and exclaimed she never wanted to go through the pain again. She believed God wanted something more for her than the dramatic, tumultuous same-sex relationships she had previously known. She also admitted that she didn’t know how to have “normal” friendships with women.***

---

<sup>165</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) *Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality*. USA: Scripture Press Publications, p. 59.

<sup>166</sup> Ibid.

<sup>167</sup> Ibid. p. 59.

<sup>168</sup> Hallman Janelle (2008) *The Heart of Female Same Sex Attraction: A comprehensive Counseling resource*. USA: IVP Books, pp. 17-18.

**They always became emotionally enmeshed or sexualized. For the next few years, Karen made a commitment to work on her life and relationships. Her therapist watched her struggle through deep pain, so severe at times that she questioned her will to live. Yet Karen had tenacity, determination and courage to fight for the life she had always dreamed of having – one that included a close community of female friends and perhaps marriage and a family. In therapy she confronted memories of childhood abuse and challenged core negative beliefs about herself and God. For instance, Karen realized her own self-hatred kept her from believing and receiving care and kindness from God and others. She stopped using some of her defensive behaviours, such as sarcasm and anger, and familiar paths of emotional escape, such as drinking and contemplating suicide whether she felt pain. She stabilized her personal life by settling into a job and an apartment that she enjoyed, and she stepped out into new opportunities for friendship and community. Now, Karen reports she has many female friendships free of intense dependency and sexualisation. Her relationships are satisfying, fulfilling and reciprocal. Although same-sex feelings still arise from time to time, she nevertheless has an overarching sense of well-being and peace, knowing that she is loveable and valuable. She no longer fears the times when feelings of loneliness surface. She has learned to nurture herself and reach out to others for support.**

**She reports feeling like a totally different person. When asked what helped her stabilize and make such incredible change: Karen replied, “My therapist! She was focused on me. She cared about all of my life. She was consistent, attentive and patient. Her calming voice, her strong boundaries, her availability, her listening ears, her gentleness and her femininity all somehow changed me! She never gave up on me. She gave me hope.”**



One can clearly see that the resolution to homosexuality is a loving relationship in which the individual can grow into a mature person while he/she establishes new thought patterns in their mind, about themselves and their relationships. In essence, to re-establish a **loving relationship** with God, oneself and ones neighbours. Coincidentally, this is the very first and most important commandment given in the Bible by Jesus Christ:

***Then one of them, which was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying, Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.***

***Matthew 22:34-37***

God knows, in His infinite wisdom, that all that mankind need, is to experience His love and to share it with the world. For homosexuality, **strongholds in the mind** that keeps one from really knowing God as a loving Father and from experiencing His love must be broken down by using the Word of God that is exactly made for this purpose:

***For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;)***

***Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ; And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.***

***2 Corinthians 10:3-6***

All the strongholds in the mind created as a result of wrong beliefs are to be torn down and replaced by the truth of God's Word. Every wrong imagination, be it a faulty belief about oneself, a sinful sexual imagination or anything that **sets itself up** against the truth and knowledge of God's Word are to be cast down out of the mind. This is the path to healing and to be set free from the snares of the enemy.

The Word of God says that one will know the truth and the truth will set on free:

***And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.***

***John 8:32***

Indeed, the Living Word of God has the power to free and to lift one out of bondage, hallelujah!

## **8. HOMOSEXUALITY AND AIDS/HIV**

When considering medical data on homosexual behaviour it is clear HIV and AIDS are more prevalent amongst homosexual men than in heterosexual men as a result of the prevalence of anal sex among such men as well as the fact that promiscuous behaviour is common amongst gay men<sup>169</sup>. Anal sex, more prevalent amongst gay men, puts them in danger for contracting diseases like Hepatitis B, Neisseria gonorrhoea and anal cancer<sup>170</sup>. The life expectancy of gay men are much lower than for heterosexual men who are married<sup>171</sup>.

The mere fact that a homosexual lifestyle results in death should give an indication that it is not wholesome or from God. And this is the exact intent of the enemy – killing the children of God as he is the destroyer of mankind (John 10:10). God would never lead one on a path that leads to ones destruction as He promises to take care of His children throughout all of His Word.( 2 Peter 1:4, Jeremiah 29:11, Matthew 11:28-29, Isaiah 40:29-31, Philippians 4:19, Romans 8:37-38, Proverbs 1:33, John 14:27, Romans 10:9, Romans 6:23).

---

<sup>169</sup> Lutzer Erwin W (2004) The Truth about same sex marriage. 6 Things you must know about what's really at stake. USA: Moody Publishers, P. 28.

<sup>170</sup> Ibid.

<sup>171</sup> Ibid.

## 9. HOMOSEXUALITY AND SPIRITUAL INFLUENCES

Several causes for homosexuality have been explored most of them being psychological. Besides the strongholds that exist in the mind as a result of wrong belief systems, there might be another cause, often overlooked responsible for creating and causing homosexual tendencies. This might be from a spiritual origin.

The Bible is very clear about spiritual influences in the lives of humankind. Several accounts exist where Jesus Christ Himself dealt with demons in the Bible<sup>172</sup>. Demons, or **evil spirits**, have the potential to influence the lives of even God's children by having "legal ground" in their lives<sup>173</sup>.

These evil spirits are able to attach themselves to the spirits mankind and thereby have an influence on their lives from the spiritual realm (demonic oppression). The worst spiritual influence is when a demon has so much legal right that they are able to completely possess a human being and thereby temporarily or sometimes permanently "replacing" the spirit of the human being with their own to exert complete control of the body and soul of the individual.

Like Satan, evil spirits are set out to destroy and control the lives of mankind. Demons gain the "right of entry" into a persons' life and are able to exert control and influence a person's life. Sin or generational curses are two ways in which demons can take legal right to influence and manipulate the lives of human beings through the spiritual realm. This is why God commands in His Word for His children to be holy<sup>174</sup>.

---

<sup>172</sup> According to Matthew 8:28-34, Mark 5:1-17

<sup>173</sup> Malan Christina Dr (2010) The perversion of mankind through sexual brokenness and deviation with special reference to homosexuality, destroying God's purpose for Godly bloodlines. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 279.

<sup>174</sup> 1 Peter 1:16

A demon cannot touch righteousness because a righteous person is under the protection of God Himself. This is why when Jesus walked the earth no demon could get a hold on Him as He was without sin and perfectly righteous (Hebrews 4:15)<sup>175</sup>.

With this background in mind, homosexuality being a sin, means that all homosexual individuals have a door wide open for the demonic to enter. Further to the sexual sins that are committed that leads to very strong bondages, the wounded souls and wrong beliefs also further opens the door for demonic attack within the lives of these people<sup>176</sup>.

Several demons and principalities work together to create bondage within a person's life. One of these demons is called **Lesbos** and individuals carrying this demon spirit may present with the following symptoms<sup>177</sup>:

- Homosexual/lesbian tendencies or will cause full blown homosexuality/lesbianism
- Individuals not getting married – called latent homosexuality causes the person to stay single and never marry: case studies have proven that after deliverance from this demon, they got married
- It can be the result that married couples cannot conceive
- The spirit is one of the deviators of a person's sexual gender

Lesbos is named after the island in Greece on which Sapphos, a poet in the sixth century, who practised homosexuality lived<sup>178</sup>. This is also where the term "lesbian" is derived from.

---

<sup>175</sup> Malan Christina Dr (2010) The perversion of mankind through sexual brokenness and deviation with special reference to homosexuality, destroying God's purpose for Godly bloodlines. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 281.

<sup>176</sup> Ibid. p. 282.

<sup>177</sup> Ibid. p. 323.

<sup>178</sup> Homosexuality. (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Homosexuality>)

Demons are able to control and plant thoughts into **the minds** of individuals without them even realizing it is not their own thoughts. Therefore, when counselling a homosexual one always have to be aware of the fact that demons might (and are) a likelihood in the life of the individual.

## **10. RESOLVING HOMOSEXUALITY FROM A BIBLICAL PERSPECTIVE**

From the evidence given it is clear that the mind is the main target point in the enemy's assault in creating homosexual behaviour in human kind. The end goal of "creating" strongholds in the minds of God's children is to kill them or make them lead a life of sin that God condemns. As a result of their sin they would live a life separated from God unprotected from the snares of the enemy.

The idea of attacking the mind has been a tactic from the enemy since the beginning of time. By attacking the human race in the very early years of their life – essentially when their mind is still a "blank sheet" results in him directly or indirectly controlling their choices and lives in a very subtle way. An insight into the character and deceitful plans of the enemy will give a better understanding of his modes operandi on the earth in his war against the children of God.

The battle for the **control of the human mind** is not a new phenomenon of the current day. This deceitful feat is as old as the very Garden of Eden in which **Satan**, the adversary of the Living God, gained control of what was rightfully given to the beloved sons and daughters of God.

In the Garden of Eden after God created **mankind**, He blessed them and said:

***And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.***

***Genesis 2:16-17***

God blessed man and gave him dominion over the Garden, to uphold and to enjoy. Satan, who was thrown from heaven (Luke 10:18) because of the **sin of pride** and wanting to usurp (gain control over) the throne of God, attacked the children of God in such a cunning way as to gain control not only over them but also over the world that God created. This is recorded in Genesis 3:

***“Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.”***

**Genesis 3:1-6**

Notice that Satan used **deception** to twist and pervert the truth of God’s Word in order to pervert her mind into believing that a Loving God is holding out on them. Based on **believing the lie** that Satan established in Eve’s mind – she chose to disobey God and eat of the fruit of the tree. Notice, Satan did not physically force Eve to eat of the fruit of the tree, he worked on her **mind** and perverted the truth to change her belief that God is trustworthy and He will take care of them. He also played on her desire to be **like God**, which if you read the scriptures, was already true as God created mankind in **His image** (according to Genesis 1:27). Since that day there has been a war going on **in** and **for** the minds of mankind.

After the fall of mankind – sin entered the world and the spirit of mankind, that part of mankind always in contact and close fellowship with their Creator, the Almighty God, lost its connection with the Life Giving God and was now banished from the Garden and sent out into the world paying the price for submitting to the lies of Satan.

After the fall of mankind in the Garden of Eden, death set in. Mankind died spiritually as God said that they would. They became partakers of their **sin nature** which ultimately leads to death.

***“Those who are dominated by the sinful nature think about sinful things, but those who are controlled by the Holy Spirit think about things that please the Spirit. So letting your sinful nature control your mind leads to death. But letting the Spirit control your mind leads to life and peace. For the sinful nature is always hostile to God. It never did obey God’s laws, and it never will. That’s why those who are still under the control of their sinful nature can never please God.”***

***Romans 8:5-8***

It is clear that the sin nature leads to death. We see from Scripture that the carnal or sin nature in which mankind is born since the fall of man:

***“For I was born a sinner - yes, from the moment my mother conceived me.”***

***Psalms 51:5***

***“When Adam sinned, sin entered the world. Adam’s sin brought death, so death spread to everyone, for everyone sinned. Yes, people sinned even before the law was given. But it was not counted as sin because there was not yet any law to break. Still, everyone died—from the time of Adam to the time of Moses—even those who did not disobey an explicit commandment of God, as Adam did. Now Adam is a symbol, a representation of Christ, who was yet to come.”***

***Romans 5:12-14***

In other words, the sin or carnal nature, as a result of the fall of Adam and Eve have been imparted to mankind – and every human being that is born are born into its snare and captivity. This nature is in direct contrast to the nature and will of God and it leads to death:

***“For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life through Christ Jesus our Lord.”***

***Romans 6:23***

As homosexuality is regarded a sin, one author states<sup>179</sup>:

***“Accordingly we cannot conclude that homosexuality cannot be assimilated to the divine order of creation, but belongs to the realm of man’s fall into sin. God’s will for man is universally heterosexual with respect to sexual expression and activity. [Homosexuality] is in principle disapproved by God, for it is contrary to the creation ordinance of marriage, such activity is sinful simply in virtue of its homosexual nature.”***

God, in His mercy, ***provided the answer*** to a sinful and rebellious human race. He sent His very Own Son as an Atonement for the sins of mankind:

***“For God loved the world so much that he gave his one and only Son, so that everyone who believes in him will not perish but have eternal life.”***

***John 3:16***

By sending His Son to die for the sins of mankind He provided a way for mankind to find their way back to Him out of their fallen state and to be made alive spiritually once again:

***“For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life through Christ Jesus our Lord.”***

***Romans 6:23***

This is called being “born again” or being “born of the Spirit”. Once one accepts Jesus Christ as ones’ Personal Lord and Savior one becomes a child of God and the Spirit of the Lord comes to live and makes residence inside of man:

***“But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name.” John 1:12***

---

<sup>179</sup>Bahnsen Greg L (1978) Homosexuality: a Biblical view. USA: Baker Book House, p. 31.



***“The Spirit of God, who raised Jesus from the dead, lives in you. And just as God raised Christ Jesus from the dead, he will give life to your mortal bodies by this same Spirit living within you.”***

***Romans 8:11***

The spirit of mankind is made alive once again – mankind is reconnected to the Spirit of God once man surrenders his life to Jesus Christ – they become the children of God, they are removed from their captivity in the kingdom of darkness (Satan’s kingdom) from which the Blood of Jesus Christ has bought them back.

***But now you have been united with Christ Jesus. Once you were far away from God, but now you have been brought near to him through the blood of Christ.***

***Ephesians 2:13***

***For there is only one God and one Mediator who can reconcile God and humanity—the man Christ Jesus.***

***1 Timothy 2:5***

Once mankind is “born again” or “born of the Spirit” through Jesus Christ, they have been washed clean of their sin and are now deemed ***righteous*** through Christ. This means that their old carnal nature have died with Jesus Christ on the cross. The Bible says that they have been made new:

***Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.***

***2 Corinthians 5:17***

This means that the relationship between God and man has been restored through Jesus Christ – the old carnal nature is removed from an individual who accepted Jesus Christ as their Personal Lord and Savior and the righteous Nature of Jesus Christ is imparted unto them. A very important truth needs to be distinguished at this point: although the sinful or carnal nature of mankind has been dealt with at the cross of Jesus Christ and an individual accepting His Blood sacrifice for their sins are deemed righteous before God – their ***minds needs to be renewed to this profound truth.***

The mind of mankind is like a computer trapped in its ways of thinking. Mankind consists of spirit, soul and body (1 Thessalonians 5:23), the working of the Holy Spirit at being “born again” resides in the spirit of mankind. It is through **faith** and faith alone that one accepts this Divine transaction in which the sinful nature is replaced with the righteous nature of Jesus Christ, without this faith it is impossible to please God or to move into His Divine plan and calling for ones’ life (Hebrews 11:6).

The Bible states that the mind needs to be renewed to the truths of God:

***“Don’t copy the behavior and customs of this world, but let God transform you into a new person by changing the way you think. Then you will learn to know God’s will for you, which is good and pleasing and perfect.”***

***Romans 12:2***

This is the single most life changing process that a human being will ever go through in terms of coming into the will of God for their lives. Without renewing the mind, one would stay in the darkness of the old habitual patterns of their old nature and never live in the fullness of life that God intended for them to have. This is because the mind is like a computer, set in its ways, it is programmed and will continue to think in the ways that are hostile to God and to His Word unless, it is renewed to the truths of the Word of God.

Once mankind is born again they need to take up the responsibility to find out how it is that God wants them to live as they are no longer slaves of the sinful, fleshly nature. The Bible states that one is to “work out your own salvation”:

***“...work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.”***

***Philippians 2:12***

This means that the ways of thinking of the carnal nature (that are hostile against God) needs to be replaced with the Word of God – and by learning, in cooperation with the Holy Spirit, His ways of living.

In this way every Christian who accepted Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior has to deal with a two-fold problem in the mind<sup>180</sup>: they are to “root out” the old habitual sinful ways of thinking while secondly, replace these old sinful ways with the Word and truth of God. This has a profound implications for every person on the earth and can only be done by faith as without faith it is impossible to please the Lord (Hebrews 11:6).

The carnal mind of mankind has been, since a child is born, establishing patterns of thinking in which it protects itself, tries to get what it wants – in essence, it is set up to guard and keep its ways<sup>181</sup>. The mind creates a problem when one submits to new authority of the Spirit of God Who comes to live inside each and every believer. God wants His Spirit and His Word to control our lives as it leads to life and peace (as was seen) whereas the ways of the carnal mind will lead to death.

The moment the Holy Spirit comes to live inside a human being He starts working inside of him/her to make one more Christlike (i.e. to conform the individual to the ways of God's Word and commandments). The carnal mind is in direct contrast to God's ways and in a sense still wants to “do its own thing” in order to stay in control. A struggle for headship beings on who will rule the life of the individual – the “self” or the Spirit of God<sup>182</sup>.

Jesus Christ said that to him who overcame [his fleshly mind and desires] will be given the a place in His Kingdom on His throne:

***To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.***

***Revelation 3:21***

---

<sup>180</sup> Sandford John L, Sandford Lauren R (1991) The renewal of the mind. USA: Victory House Publishers, p. 19.

<sup>181</sup> Ibid. p. 20.

<sup>182</sup> Ibid. p. 21.

This theme of overcoming and what will be given to the believer who overcomes is repeated throughout the prophetic book of Revelations (Revelation 2:7; 2:17; 2:26; 3:5; 3:12). It should give an indication of the importance of overcoming ones own sin nature as the Bible states that all children of God are capable of:

***“Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat loveth him also that is begotten of him. By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments. For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous. For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God? This is he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.”***

***1 John 5:1-6***

Thus being “born of God” or “born again” by accepting the Lord Jesus Christ through faith in Him, mankind is to work out his own salvation and overcome his [already defeated] sinful nature within him. This process is not something mankind is able to master on his own without the help of the Holy Spirit residing inside of him. This process is especially true for people practicing homosexuality. They not only have to deal with their inherited sin nature but also with the strongholds that the enemy planted within them which are essentially lies about themselves and about their identities.

Homosexuality is seen a sin in our sinful nature as it was inherited from Adam<sup>183</sup> that must be “put off” in order for the homosexual to take up his or her new nature provided by Christ through his death and resurrection from the cross. The Bible says that if anyone is ***in Christ***, he is a new creature (2 Corinthians 5:17) – he now has a new nature. Those who now have the ***mind of Christ*** are ruled by the Spirit and not the flesh (Romans 8:5-8).

---

<sup>183</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: SP Publications, p. 38.

The Bible states that mankind has been given a **sound mind**:

***"For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind."***

***2 Timothy 1:7***

One of the definitions of sound in the Merriam Webster's dictionary is<sup>184</sup>: ***"showing good judgment or sense"***. Like was said, the mind is like a computer in that it has been "programmed" in a certain way: it possess over certain kinds of thinking patterns that are ingrained in its functioning<sup>185</sup>. There habitual thinking patterns are never left unless it is forced off track and replaced with a new thinking pattern<sup>186</sup>. Anyone who has ever tried to establish a new habit or rid themselves of any old bad habits will have experienced the inertia of the mind when used to a certain way of thinking and doing.

One place this phenomena is particularly seen is in the field of psychology where countless hours of counseling resulting in a counselee gaining victory over a certain area of their life merely returns to their old habitual ways of doing and falls back into the same addiction or wrong behavior they started out in<sup>187</sup>. These patterns need to be replaced with new ways of thinking thereby replacing old habitual ways of thinking.

Joe Dallas, author and former President of Exodus International commented as follows<sup>188</sup>:

***"Even if homosexuality is someday proven to be inborn, inborn does not mean normal...Second, inborn tendencies toward certain behaviours (such as homosexuality) do not make those behaviours moral."***

---

<sup>184</sup> Sound (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/sound>)

<sup>185</sup> Sandford John L, Sandford Lauren R (1991) *The renewal of the mind*. USA: Victory House Publishers, p. 17.

<sup>186</sup> Ibid. p.17.

<sup>187</sup> Ibid. p.18.

<sup>188</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 47.

***Obesity and violent behaviour are not thought to be genetically influenced...Surely we are not going to say that obesity, violence, alcoholism, and adultery are legitimate because they were inherited. So it is with homosexuality. Whether inborn or acquired, it is still, like all sexual contact apart from marriage, immoral. And immoral behaviour cannot be legitimized by a quick baptism in the gene pool."***

An important point is made by Dr Consiglio<sup>189</sup>:

***"No one chooses to be or feel homosexuality initially. It was not a choice your overcomer [counselee] made early in life when it began as an emotional disorientation. It happened to him at a very early stage of life. It arose from the early environmental experiences which he had with his parents, peers and siblings, and other significant people such as teachers and pastors.***

***It especially has to do with the dissatisfying love bond which he had with his mother and father, but most often with the parent of the same gender. Later in life homosexuality became temptation, same sex attraction, and a sinful behavioural choice which he wilfully made when he indulged homosexual feelings, thoughts and attractions."***

This in essence sums up the cause of the "problem of homosexuality" within the mind. The mind must be renewed according to the Word of God so that the wrong thinking patterns and beliefs instilled by the enemy might be replaced with new thinking patterns. The question now begs as to can homosexuality be overcome? From a psychological perspective Dr Consiglio draws the encouraging conclusion on the resolving homosexuality: it can be overcome<sup>190</sup>!

---

<sup>189</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: SP Publications, p. 37.

<sup>190</sup> Ibid. p. 31.

Even though feelings of homosexuality sometimes return, they too can be overcome and heterosexual feelings (the way that God designed the human being) can return<sup>191</sup>. Of course, from a Christian perspective healing is possible as nothing is impossible or too hard for God (Luke 1:27 and Jeremiah 32:27)!

God judges homosexuality however, if the person with an “emotional disorientation to homosexuality would honour and acknowledge God’s judgement about homosexuality – he would receive the strength and power to overcome it by the healing work of the Holy Spirit within him<sup>192</sup>.” The healing process of a homosexual involves a ***process of renewing the mind*** as well as to “work through” unresolved issues from the early childhood of the person. It is important to note that healing does not come all at once, it is a process. The homosexual needs to be guided through this process with the help and assistance of the Holy Spirit. God is essentially the Ultimate Healer and Physician in the process of healing a homosexual.

Most women facing same sex attraction, found the process of changing just that – a process<sup>193</sup>. When praying for deliverance, God sometimes chooses to heal a homosexual immediately, but most of the time, it is a long process that takes time.

Dr Consiglio means that there might be several reasons for this<sup>194</sup>:

- God never violates free will: God wants the recovering homosexual to choose His will over their own, He desires them to come to an intimate relationship with Himself and He intends to draw them into a loving relationship with Himself. He desires to teach them in a gradual way that His will is best. He seeks complete and freely chosen obedience in the healing of homosexuality

---

<sup>191</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) *Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality*. USA: SP Publications, p. 31.

<sup>192</sup> Ibid. p. 30.

<sup>193</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 25.

<sup>194</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) *Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality*. USA: SP Publications, p. 39-40.

- He desires that the homosexual uses human effort and strength in conjunction with the working of the Holy Spirit: He desires the recovering homosexual to experience God's power working within him and this stems from God's love for the individual. In this way God desires the individual to exert his own will and effort as if God were to simply ignore the "partnership" with the individual. He would violate the way that He designed him as a human-spiritual being and he would deny him the experience of personal victory in him- or herself
- God does not violate the integrity of your personality: homosexuality did not develop overnight within the individual, it has become part of the person's personality over a long period of time. It takes time to unlearn and recover parts of the person's true personality
- God is in the process of renewing your whole personality: God will "go for the roots" that caused homosexuality
- God desires to renew you spiritually: He will continue to draw the person into a deeper heart to heart relationship with Himself as the person cooperates with Him and continually turns to Him in faith, hope and love
- God watches over your psychological-emotional stability: If God were to change everything in one instance it would leave the person confused, disarmed, not knowing how to act or function, in short the person will be in an emotional crises. God is a God of love and that is not His way

While going through the process it is important to tell the counselee that the same sex attractions or temptations will not cease all at once, these feelings will however become under such control as to not hurt or influence the person as long as they keep making the correct decisions<sup>195</sup>. Instead of "acting out" when "old emotions" return, the individual will have to learn how to deal with these feelings<sup>196</sup>. A very important note on this point<sup>197</sup>:

---

<sup>195</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) *Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality*. USA: SP Publications, p. 35.

<sup>196</sup> Ibid. p. 36.

<sup>197</sup> Ibid. p. 36.



**“Only that which is wilfully indulged in can be considered sin. All the rest is temptation....Feelings, attractions, urges, desires, longings, are all temptations. Acting on any of these mentally or physically is sin.”**

Notice that “acting on temptations mentally” is considered sin in the same way that Jesus Christ said that if a man as much as lust after a woman it is considered sin<sup>198</sup>. Therefore, during the healing process of homosexuality one is to take control of ones’ own thoughts and **deliberately decide** to choose new thinking patterns.

From a psychological perspective Paulk suggests that a lesbian should work through her trauma with a female counselor or female mentor<sup>199</sup>. This indicates the lack of love and nurturing that the female received during their childhood years. This point is reiterated in her book *The Heart of Female Same Sex Attraction* Janelle Hallman, a counselor for homosexual woman wanting to come out of homosexuality explained that the one thing that healed women coming out of a homosexual relationship was the love and care and lack of judgment provided by the counselor during the therapy<sup>200</sup>.

Lesbianism is not essentially sexual: it is developmental and results because of childhood trauma or wrong perceptions a woman forms about her identity, one of which being homosexual is an unhealthy bonding with other women in an unhealthy manner<sup>201</sup>. Therefore the process of healing facilitated by a woman counsellor for lesbians or a male counsellor for males would be considered ideal as part of their healing would lie in connecting with the same sex in a healthy way.

---

<sup>198</sup> According to Matthew 5:28

<sup>199</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 122.

<sup>200</sup> Hallman Janelle (2008) *The Heart of Female Same-Sex Attraction: A comprehensive Counseling Resource*. Intervarsity Press, p. 18.

<sup>201</sup> Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 122.

Healing takes place in stages and one author<sup>202</sup> suggest the following as a possible path of healing:

***“[they are to] move from anger/discouragement/self-rejection; to acceptance of this struggle within them; to self-acceptance of [themselves] as a person; to integration of the homosexual struggle from seeing it as his whole identity to recognition that he [or she] is much more than “homosexual”. Finally he must arrive at an embracing of the homosexual struggle as his spiritual opportunity which makes him truly understand that “all things” even his struggle with homosexuality, “works together for good” and that “in all things we are more than conquerors through Him who loved us (Romans 8:28-37).***

This verse exactly demonstrates the heart of the Father – He can take, if the homosexual is willing, even their homosexual struggle and make it work out for their good and for the glory of God. So what Satan intended for destruction God can take and turn around for the best outcome.

God can take the “ashes” of life and turn it into beauty:

***To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.***

***Isaiah 61:3***

This is the wonderful God that we serve!

God is able to wash us from our sins and cleanse us of all unrighteousness if we are willing to repent of our sins:

---

<sup>202</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: Scripture Press Publications, p. 60.

**If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.**

**1 John 1:9**

He is willing and able to fully restore us to the image that He had in mind for us.

**Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God."**

**1 Corinthians 6:9-11**

This verse clearly indicate that the children of God **are justified** – the **have been** made clean of their sins. The verse says that those who were entangled in homosexuality in Corinth were cleansed and sanctified from their sins<sup>203</sup>. Healing is possible for each and every homosexual!

**"Homosexuality is learned. God made no one homosexual, nor did anyone's genes, hormones or biology<sup>204</sup>."**

**Dr Consiglio**

Dr Consiglio and Kronemeyer, a clinical psychologist, agrees on the following<sup>205</sup>:

**"With rare exceptions, homosexuality is neither inherited nor the result of some glandular disturbance or the scrambling of genes or chromosomes. Homosexuals are made, not born that way. From my 25 years of experience as a clinical psychologist, I firmly believe that homosexuality is a learned response to early painful experiences and that it can be unlearned."**

---

<sup>203</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: SP Publications, p. 28.

<sup>204</sup> Ibid. p. 36.

<sup>205</sup> Ibid. p. 37.

Dr Consiglio holds that it [homosexuality] is psychologically and emotionally learned<sup>206</sup> and it can therefore be concluded that by replacing the lies and deceit from the minds of homosexuals that they can find healing in Jesus Christ. The Word further says:

***“For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.”***

***1 John 5:4***

***“Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.”***

***1 John 4:4***

Homosexuality is ***not God's plan*** for His children, it is the result of the work of the enemy<sup>207</sup>. God preordained His children to become like Jesus Christ:

***“For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.”***

***Romans 8:29-30***

What a wonderful truth! By overcoming their worldly mindset and renewing their minds to the truth of God's word with the knowledge that Jesus Christ ***in them*** is far greater than Satan and all of the demons in this world, they will be able to overcome homosexuality.

There are five spiritual life sustaining principles that a recovering individual needs to make part of their daily living: prayer and worship, daily conversation with the Lord, regular Bible study and meditation, Christian fellowship, special friend/.accountable person<sup>208</sup>.

---

<sup>206</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) *Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality*. USA: SP Publications, p. 37.

<sup>207</sup> Ibid. p. 29.

<sup>208</sup> Ibid. p. 52.

In this journey and process of healing they will be made more and more into the Image of Christ which is God's will for their lives. They too will be able to experience the wonderful truth of John 10:10:

***The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.***

***John 10:10***

The problem described in this chapter is the separation of God's children from Him through wrong belief system making them sinful and thereby separating them from a Holy God. The core belief not only separates them but also destroys them from within and without (physical sickness) etc. One can clearly see the work of the enemy at hand in the minds of his victims.

By attacking gender Satan touches a very foundational core of human kind as was with the attack on their sexuality. Gender is given by God and is a core inner part of mankind – something that he is to value, respect and enjoy. Attacking who God made him or her to be is attacking a very core part of their identity. By destructing the identity the person would not only lose “touch” with who God made them to be but [it would also] destroy their perfect destiny that God had for them and their children.

The key to resolving homosexuality lies in ***love!*** One has to realize that God's Word is full of wonderful promises<sup>209</sup> about His plans for ones' life:

***Commit thy way unto the Lord, trust also in Him, and He shall bring it to pass.***

***Psalms 37:5***

---

<sup>209</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: SP Publications, p. 31.

---

**Ask and it will be given to you, seek and you will find, knock and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives, he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks, the door will be opened.**

**Matthew 7:7-8**

**I will go before you and level the mountains, I will break down gates of bronze and cut through bars of iron. I will give you the treasures of darkness, riches stored in secret places, so that you may know that I am the Lord, the God of Israel, who calls you by name.**

**Isaiah 45:2-3**

**But as it is written: "Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, Nor have entered into the heart of man The things which God has prepared for those who love Him."**

**1 Corinthians 2:9**

**As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten. Therefore be zealous and repent. To him who overcomes I will grant to sit with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne.**

**Revelation 3:19,21**

**'Not by might nor by power, but by My Spirit,' Says the LORD of hosts.**

**Zechariah 4:6**

**Behold, I am the LORD, the God of all flesh. Is there anything too hard for Me?**

**Jeremiah 32:27**

God knows all about how homosexuality got started in each and every one of His children and He knows how to heal it with their cooperation<sup>210</sup>. God is love and He wants only the best for His children:

**"...Fundamentally because love is the most basic similarity we all share with our Creator God, who is our Father and who is LOVE..."**

---

<sup>210</sup> Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: SP Publications, p. 31.

***Because God is Love, He is all truth, all wholeness, all goodness, all peace, all fullness, all life. Love is the central characteristic of the human race as God created us in His Own Image. Love is the lifeline between human beings. It is the deepest experience of contact and communion which two people can have with each other... It is the most satisfying, the most fulfilling. Love is therefore always at the heart of healing homosexuality<sup>211</sup>. ”***

To Him be all the glory and all the praise forever and ever! Amen!

## **11. CONCLUSION**

God created mankind with a specific Image in mind, His Own. He created mankind in the perfect unity, the perfect puzzle pieces to fit into each other. Satan, in his rage against God, launched an attack on the very sexuality of mankind that forms an integral part of their being. Satan has managed to establish lies and deceit within the minds of humankind about their God-given sexuality. Homosexuality is a sin that was (and is) severely punished by God as it perverts what God intended for His Image.

Mankind has been made led to believe by the enemy that their sinful thoughts arising about a relationship with the same sex could be a result of their genetic makeup. This is simply not true as God did not create mankind to have sexual relations with a same sex partner. Try as they may, science could not yet prove that homosexuality has a genetic root. However, the roots “same sex” dilemma that are prevalent in the lives of homosexuals are not as obvious as they seem. This severely complicates the situation of these individuals understanding who they are and why they have homosexual tendencies.

The root cause of homosexuality resides in the mind, setting aside the spiritual causes for a moment. Homosexuals experienced severe bonding issues with either their mother or their father while they were still very young.

---

<sup>211</sup> Ibid. p.52.

As God intended for the family to be a loving, caring safe unit, any disruptions in this unit will have profound repercussions for the individual. Emotional attachment bonds are to be formed in a safe family setting where parents are to love and cherish their children while modelling what it means to be in the sex that they are in. Failing to experience this and the creation of severe emotional wounds as a result of abuse whether it be emotional, physical or sexual, would result in a wrong belief system formed in the mind. This faulty belief system about oneself, others and the environment will influence the decisions, the company one keeps as well as life choices.

As a result of the absence of the correct nurturing in the childhood years no sense of identity could be formed and homosexuals will spend their lives struggling to obtain this identity in others of the same sex. Homosexuality is not about sex per se, much more about an emotional bond that needs to be formed in order for the wounded homosexual to be able to feel loved and worthy. These individuals go through life, without a sense of identity from one failed relationship into the next, carrying with them the deepest emotional pain that one can ever imagine.

The only way out of this situation is by renewing the mind through the Word of God of God and to accept the lavish love of God in order to heal all the emotional woundedness caused by childhood abuse or trauma. By accepting the love of God one can grow into a strong, loving relationship with Him and thereby establish a new way of living. Most importantly the mind needs to be renewed to the truth of God in order to re-establish its old habitual thinking patterns. It is only through truth of God's Word that one will be able to be set free from the old sinful "mind sets" and truly live a life of freedom as God intended for it to be.

It is clear from the research that homosexuality is caused by a problem in the **mind** – Satan uses this as his stronghold in order to influence the life of the individual. Satan knows that whoever controls the mind controls the person.



If he can succeed in perverting the mind at a very young age, a wrong belief system about self, others and the world would be formed within the mind of the young child and they would be set up for a life of wrong choices which would lead them deeper and deeper into sin and further and further away from God.

This, his master plan, would be achieved without the homosexual even realizing that their tendencies towards the same sex is not a result of their own mistakes or even their own choice. But thanks be to God Who sent His Only Begotten Son to die for the sins of mankind so that they could be cleansed of their sins and be saved through His sacrifice. Through Him, salvation, healing and the everlasting love that is necessary to heal the homosexual of their woundedness is available.

-----oOo-----



## *Mind programming and mind control as weapon against the human race in gaining control*

---

### 1. INTRODUCTION

God created mankind in His Own Image (Genesis 1:27) and gave them the Garden of Eden as habitation. Sadly, mankind was tempted into sinning against God by Satan, the adversary. After the fall of mankind God sent mankind out of the Garden of Eden<sup>1</sup> into the world knowing that He would eventually provide a Saviour for mankind to bear their sins and to reconcile them with Himself. Before the Fall of Mankind God gave Adam and Eve **dominion** over the Garden, over all the animals and the earth:

***“And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. And God blessed them, and God said unto them,***

---

<sup>1</sup> According to Genesis 3:23

***Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.”***

***Genesis 1:26, 28***

Mankind was made to ***rule and to reign*** not to be oppressed and controlled. The fact that Adam and Eve were able to sin against God gives an insight into the character of God: he designed mankind with a ***free will***. He did not create them and put them into slavery to serve Him against their will. They could have enjoyed all that God had for them but gave their God given authority over to the adversary of God – Satan - the moment that they disobeyed God and sinned. They had a free choice whether to serve God or not. God is love<sup>2</sup> and it is this love that permits mankind to make their own choice as to whom they will serve. God knows what is best for His children and therefore instructs them to obey the laws that He set into place for the safety of His children. Mankind is the object of God's love, akin to His character, which is Love. The Bible is a Book of relationships in which God reveals Himself to His children. All of His laws and teachings are designed to protect His children from the dangers of this world as a result of the presence and workings of the adversary, Satan. An account of love is given in 1 Corinthians 13 in the Bible:

***“Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. It does not dishonor others, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. It always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres. Love never fails. And now these three remain: faith, hope and love. But the greatest of these is love. “***

***1 Corinthians 13:4-8, 13***

Some of the attributes of the very nature of God is goodness, kindness and love:

***“ The LORD replied, “I will make all my goodness pass before you, and I will call out my name, Yahweh, before you. For I will show mercy to anyone I choose, and I will show compassion to anyone I choose.”***

***Exodus 33:19***

---

<sup>2</sup> According to 1 John 4:18

***"Don't you see how wonderfully kind, tolerant, and patient God is with you? Does this mean nothing to you? Can't you see that his kindness is intended to turn you from your sin?"***

***Romans 2:4***

***"But anyone who does not love does not know God, for God is love."***

***1 John 4:8***

***"I have loved you with an everlasting love; I have drawn you with unfailing kindness."***

***Jeremiah 31:3***

The character of God is not to enslave but to free and restore mankind to Himself. God proves His love for His creation by sending His Only Begotten Son (John 3:16) to die for the sins that they have committed against Him in order to restore them to their original position and relationship with Himself. Even today, God is still restoring, redeeming and loving His children in a fallen world. Jesus Christ, the Saviour of mankind, was sent to set free human beings from the captivity enforced upon them by Satan. The Bible states it the following way in the Book of Isaiah:

***"The Spirit of the Sovereign LORD is on me, because the LORD has anointed me to proclaim good news to the poor. He has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim freedom for the captives and release from darkness for the prisoners,<sup>10</sup> to proclaim the year of the LORD's favour and the day of vengeance of our God, to comfort all who mourn, and provide for those who grieve in Zion—to bestow on them a crown of beauty instead of ashes, the oil of joy instead of mourning, and a garment of praise instead of a spirit of despair. They will be called oaks of righteousness, a planting of the LORD for the display of his splendor."***

***Isaiah 61:1-3***

Note that Jesus was sent to bind up the broken hearted and to proclaim freedom for the captives and to ***release them from darkness***. In this verse, as with John 10:10 – the intentions of God is clear: to liberate, to restore, to redeem, to give life and to promote the freedom of His children who are under the oppression of the enemy.

God does not only want to give freedom but also restore mankind to the **abundant life** that He intended for them to have. Another one of God's promises gives an account for this statement in His Word:

***“For I know the plans I have for you,” declares the LORD, “plans to prosper you and not to harm you, plans to give you hope and a future.”***

***Jeremiah 29:11***

God's Word not only speaks of restoration of His relationship and His love for His children but also speaks about the hopeful, purposeful plan He has for them as this very powerful verse illustrates. Satan intends to not only steal and destroy the perfect future that God planned for His children but also to take away their free will in order for them not to be able to serve God. The will to gain control rests upon Satan's desire to establish a New World Order in which he will rule and reign (discussed in the next chapter).

This chapter explores the ways in which **the mind** is attacked by Satan in his feat to gain control of the human being (God's beloved children) and not only to place them under his control but also to then use them as instruments in his hands instead of free children of God that He sent His only Begotten Son to the earth to die for. This chapter will deem to explore the ways and means by which **extreme mind control** is gained through **mind control techniques** and the **programming of the mind**.

In order to gain a clear understanding on how the mind is programmed it is necessary to understand how the mind and brain develops and functions in order to understand how Satan is able to pervert and use the mind functions as it was designed by God.

## **2. THE MIND/BRAIN CONNECTION**

As one of God's handiworks, the human brain is one of the most intricate and fascinating organ's that exists on the planet. Scientists have been studying the brain for decades and still do not understand everything there is to understand about the brain and all of its functions.

At birth, the lowest part of the brain is responsible for autonomic vital functions (like the heartbeat, breathing, blood pumping, reflexes, digestion etc.)<sup>3</sup>. The mid brain contains all the “mammalian functions” like emotions, bonding with mother, balance, feeling protective over offspring etc.<sup>4</sup>. Other than these two parts of the brain, the brain is not yet “connected” to the body, in other words the brain is only connected to the body via its “vital functions” and mammalian instincts. The upper brain, consists of billions of neurons (or “brain tissue”) that have not yet formed connections with the body. The connections between this part of the brain and body are only formed during the first years of life as development progresses<sup>5</sup>.

During the first year of life as the baby learns new actions and movements these neurons in the upper brain start to connect to each other as the baby slowly gains control over his/her body. For instance, a baby learns to sequentially control the following: eyes (start looking around for “mommy”), neck muscles, shoulders (back and forth turning motions starts), hands, arms, torso, crawling etc. Each of these neuronal pathways forms as the baby develops and happens as the neurons connect to each other in the brain that is essentially a “clean slate” at the beginning of life. The same goes for **the mind**.

The “mind” connects with the brain at the very top of the brain stem, at a place called the thalamus. It is here that the mind connects to the brain in a few hundred cells where **consciousness** resides<sup>6</sup>. It is also here that the “thinking capacity” that distinguishes humans from animals resides. Without this connection of a few hundred cells between “the mind” and the brain the human being will become “animal like” in their behaviour<sup>7</sup>. The main function of the mind, as will be seen, is always to try and **create order from chaos**<sup>8</sup>.

---

<sup>3</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End-Time Battle Plans: DID/SRA. SCAT 3. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, pp.14-16.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid.

<sup>8</sup> Ibid.

The mind and body is connected as follows: the brain receives information from the environment through the five senses (eyes, ears, nose, tongue and skin) and stores the data in the memory. The soul (***mind***, will and emotions) is the non-material part of man that is in close connection to the brain in order to operate the body<sup>9</sup>. The information gathered by the brain is processed in the soul by “experiencing the data” (feels, emotions), processing the data (thinks, mind) and deciding how to direct the brain’s response to the data received (chooses, will)<sup>10</sup>. In this way the brain is connected and works closely with the soul in order to operate the body.

As was said, the brain and mind of the human being is so intricately designed that scientists are today still battling to understand some of its wondrous features. One thing is clear, when a baby is born, the mind and brain is like a “clean slate” of paper onto which life experiences are written and processed. Depending of the type of stimulation received the brain and mind will construct itself to store the learned behaviour, and will then always aim to create order out of chaos.

In a loving, caring family, as is the way that God designed for it to be, a child has the opportunity to learn and grow and form thinking patterns and mental models that will set it up to succeed and prosper in life. These mental models, as was seen from previous chapters, is the way in which a person will think about themselves, how they will react to the world around them and how they will behave in the environment they find themselves in. Essentially, whatever happens to a person in their very early years of life will determine, for the most part and without God’s intervention later in life, how they will live and how successful they will be.

It is the aim and main goal of the adversary of God to use and distort these magnificent mechanisms by which mankind was created in order to gain control and to use mankind for his own purposes.

---

<sup>9</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 6.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid.

This is the main premise of this chapter – Satan gaining control, either partially or completely, over the minds of human kind. Gaining control over the mind can vary from just an entrance through sin or emotional wounds to more “binding” ways like generational curses or as in the worst case, **deliberate mind control**. Mind control is not only a clever scheme for contemporary times but reaches far beyond into a greater scheme of evil as will be played out in the End Times upon the earth.

Some immediate questions arise: how does mind control work? How is it possible to obtain control over God’s children without their knowledge and consent and how are Satan and his agents able to keep a person under mind control to do the most horrific things imaginable? If Jesus Christ came to set mankind free, how is it that people remain under mind control? Also, what does Satan gain from going to this extent in controlling the children of God? This chapter deems to answer these questions and provide answers to the apparent evil agenda behind mind control in a subsequent chapter.

### **3. WHAT IS MIND CONTROL?**

Mind control has a myriad of forms and can be done in a multitude of ways. The bottom line in mind control is to gain control over the individual. The amount of control varies depending on the type or way of mind control that is used. Mind control can be to done to persuade someone to accept an argument or way of thinking that they would not otherwise have by creating certain circumstances that makes it necessary for the new way of thinking to be implemented. This can be done by various mechanisms that will be discussed throughout the remainder of this chapter.

One way of exerting mind control is through **subliminal mind control** in which subliminal messages are sent to the unconscious part of the mind directly. The following section gives a more insight into this phenomenon.



#### 4. SUBLIMINAL MIND CONTROL

As was stated this form of mind control uses messages that are projected into the unconscious mind directly. **Subliminal** is defined as follows<sup>11</sup>:

- 1. Below the threshold of conscious perception. Used of stimuli.**
- 2. Inadequate to produce conscious awareness but able to evoke a response: subliminal propaganda.**

Yet another definition of subliminal states<sup>12</sup>:

***“existing or operating below the threshold of consciousness; being or employing stimuli insufficiently intense to produce a discreet sensation but often being or designed to be intense enough to influence the mental processes or the behavior of the individual: a subliminal stimulus; subliminal advertising.”***

Notice that the messages used are not picked up by the normal human senses but rather goes directly into the subconscious mind. When one considers the meaning of the word **subliminal** the prefix, “sub” is a Latin word meaning *under* while “limen” means *threshold*<sup>13</sup>. Taken together subliminal thus means *beneath the threshold* that refers to the sensory threshold of a person<sup>14, 15</sup>. Subliminal mind control refers to the **hidden messages** that are sent through various means, especially the media that have an influence on the subconscious mind of a person<sup>16</sup>. It is said that these messages would affect the mind in such a way that it could result in setting a **change in mood, appetite or thinking**. So powerful is subliminal messaging that by embedding secret hidden messages into a certain medium, like an advertisement, a person would feel an urge of positive or negative desire and thoughts<sup>17</sup>.

---

<sup>11</sup> Subliminal. The online Free dictionary (<http://www.thefreedictionary.com/subliminal>)

<sup>12</sup> Subliminal (<http://dictionary.reference.com/browse/subliminal>)

<sup>13</sup> Subliminal mind control. (<http://www.slideshare.net/secretofmindpower/subliminal-mind-control-everything-you-need-to-know>)

<sup>14</sup> Subliminal (<https://www.vocabulary.com/dictionary/subliminal>)

<sup>15</sup> Subliminal mind control. (<http://www.slideshare.net/secretofmindpower/subliminal-mind-control-everything-you-need-to-know>)

<sup>16</sup> Ibid.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid.

In this way, subliminal mind control bypasses the five senses and places the actions, reactions and desires under the control of what is being projected into the subconscious mind. An example would be an advertisement that flashes the subliminal message “Drink Coca Cola” for 0.003 seconds during a film, suddenly one would feel the urge to buy and drink Coca Cola after watching the film. In this experiment that was done, this is exactly what happened. The subliminal phrases “Drink Coca Cola” and “Eat Popcorn” were flashed for 1/2000 of a second during a movie called *Picnic*. This experiment was done by psychologist James Vicary in 1957 and sales of popcorn and coke went up with 57.8 percent and 18.1 percent respectively<sup>18</sup>! This is the power of subliminal mind control.

Subliminal messages could be visual in the form of pictures or it could be auditory messages<sup>19</sup>. Because the subconscious does not work with the human senses – whatever it receives it perceives a “real” and true<sup>20</sup>. The subconscious will then create a reason for the conscious mind (in response to the subliminal message received) a logical mind-set to follow through<sup>21</sup>. If the subliminal message is constant a new attitude or habit could even be created<sup>22</sup>.

Subliminal mind control works by ***influence***<sup>23</sup>. ***Subliminal programming*** is a method to change or create an attitude, habit or desire<sup>24</sup>. It is deliberate process created by communication experts<sup>25</sup> in the world today with the sole purpose of conveying subliminal messages to influence and control ones decisions. It is mostly set up to advocate an idea or decision that will persuade a person to think in a certain way in order to buy a product or to indoctrinate them to accept certain ideas about a product. This is called ***hidden persuasion***.

---

<sup>18</sup> Subliminal Manipulation (<http://subliminalmanipulation.blogspot.com/>)

<sup>19</sup> Subliminal mind control. (<http://www.slideshare.net/secretofmindpower/subliminal-mind-control-everything-you-need-to-know>)

<sup>20</sup> Ibid.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid

<sup>24</sup> Subliminal definition. <http://www.subliminaldefinition.org/>

<sup>25</sup> Subliminal Manipulation (<http://subliminalmanipulation.blogspot.com/>)

The problem with subliminal mind control is that it does not “go through the senses” which means that there is no possibility to discern or weigh the value thereof – it just goes directly into the mind<sup>26</sup> and influences ones’ judgement, behaviour and attitude<sup>27</sup>.

The history of subliminal messages dates back to the 5<sup>th</sup> century B.C. when Greeks did experiments in which they repeated certain words or phrases to see if they could lead a person in a specific “way” without them knowing the action that the experimenters wanted executed<sup>28</sup>. The use of subliminal techniques in print communication has been going on since the World War I period, and the “mainstream” subliminal messaging was done in the 1950’s<sup>29</sup>. In the same time “sub-audible” messages were being sent in commercials for the first time<sup>30</sup>.

Subliminal messages works on the brain’s natural mechanisms, the ***unconscious mind***. The subconscious mind operates below the level of the conscious awareness – it is responsible for controlling reflexes, automatic functions and processing and storing of incoming information<sup>31</sup>. The subconscious mind has a phenomenal capacity to process information and picks up almost everything in its surroundings.

The subconscious mind is aware of everything that goes on around it and is able to “sieve” information that then goes into the conscious mind. In this way the conscious mind is only “aware” of a few of the things happening in its surroundings as all the information that is “not necessary”, like the room temperature when having a conversation, is not “realized”. The subconscious mind, however, is always aware of everything in its surroundings.

---

<sup>26</sup> Subliminal Manipulation (<http://subliminalmanipulation.blogspot.com/>).

<sup>27</sup> Ibid.

<sup>28</sup> Subliminal mind control. (<http://www.slideshare.net/secretofmindpower/subliminal-mind-control-everything-you-need-to-know>)

<sup>29</sup> Ibid.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid.

<sup>31</sup> Ibid.

For instance, when standing in a crowded room, one is able to focus on the immediate conversation with a person while at the same time one is able to pick up other information like someone calling out ones name in another part of the room<sup>32</sup>. One would not only hear ones name – that is familiar – but one would also hear what was being said in the same sentence without being part of that conversation<sup>33</sup>. This illustrates how the subconscious mind picks up all the information around it. Such is the wonder of our God-given brains!

The subconscious mind stores all the information that has ever been experienced or that one was ever exposed to. The information stays in the subconscious mind and will in the right circumstances “trigger” the right reaction in a person. In this way subliminal messaging strengthens, accelerates and reinforces reactions in a person who was already predisposed to the subject of the message<sup>34</sup>.

In an experiment done in 1983 on an average class of Tucson eighth graders, processed paper containing the subliminal message “You are loved” were used for them to write a self-esteem test. The results indicated that pupils who wrote on the processed paper scored 15% higher than those who wrote on plain paper<sup>35</sup>. The same test was given to a class of underachievers and those who wrote on the processed paper scored 37.5% higher than those who wrote on plain paper. Dana Osman, president of Osman-Kord Ltd, the company who printed the paper claims that “subliminal messages only work to influence minor decisions and they are most powerful when reinforcing an already made decision<sup>36</sup>.”

This is an interesting concept if one considers that predisposal to a certain idea or belief would make one more vulnerable to the acceptance thereof in future situations.

---

<sup>32</sup> Subliminal Manipulation (<http://subliminalmanipulation.blogspot.com/>)

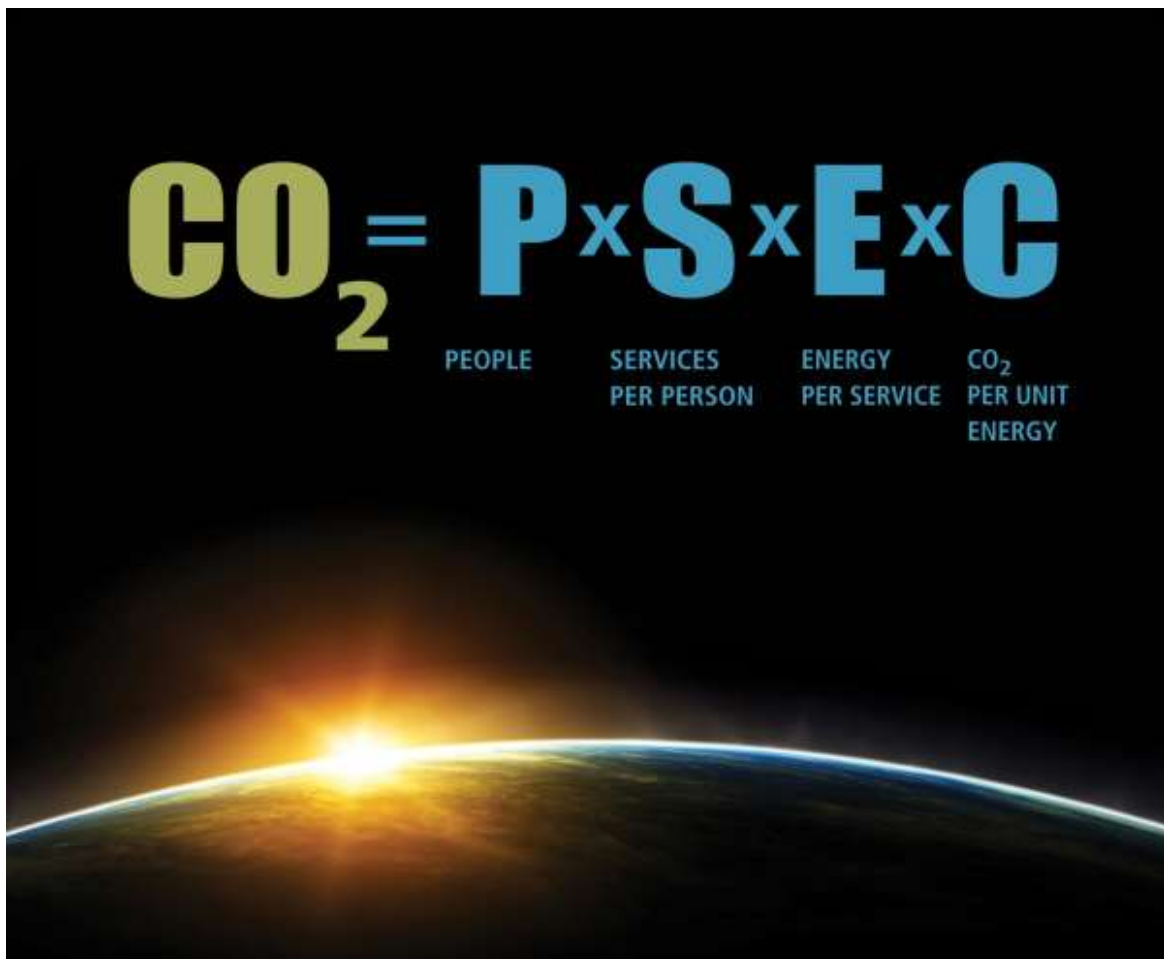
<sup>33</sup> Ibid.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid.

<sup>35</sup> Subliminal advertising and Modern Day Brainwashing. (<http://transmissionsmedia.com/subliminal-advertising-and-modern-day-brainwashing/>)

<sup>36</sup> Ibid.

In other words, when a decision has been made (or an idea implanted in the mind), exposure to the same idea by way of subliminal messaging would reinforce this idea. It is for this reason that the Bible says that mankind is to guard their hearts (proverbs 23:4) – and to take every thought captive unto obedience in Christ (2 Corinthians 10:5) as any false belief already in the mind could be reinforced by subliminal messaging from the enemy. Subliminal messages have been part of communication media since the mid twentieth century. The following pictures show how subliminal messages are “hidden” in advertisements:



**Figure 1.** This is a presentation given by Bill Gates on energy<sup>37</sup>.

One can clearly see the subliminal spelling of the word “SEX” in this presentation.

---

<sup>37</sup> Subliminal messages in advertising. (<http://subliminalmanipulation.blogspot.com/2010/09/subliminal-messages-in-advertising-in.html>)



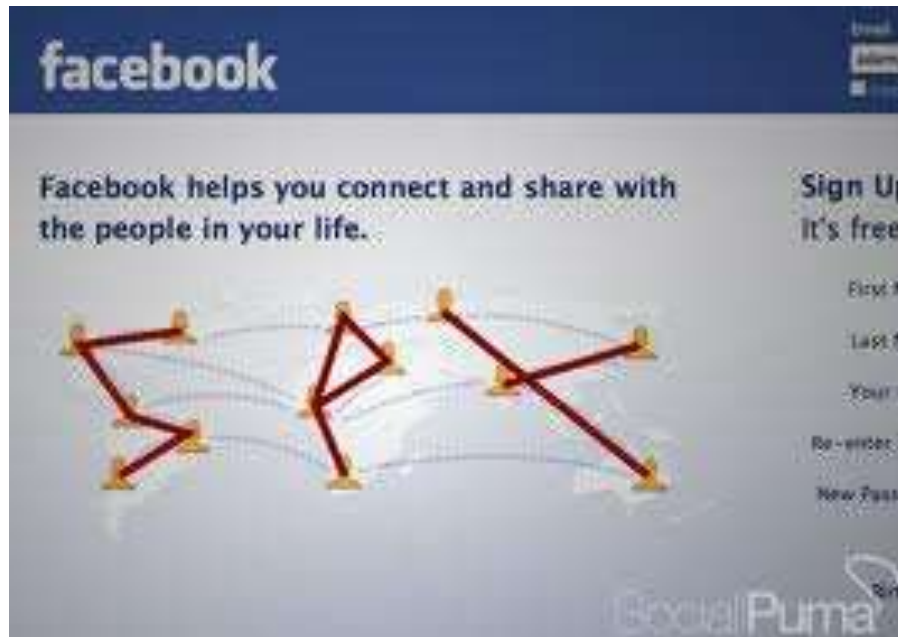
**Figure 2.** A subliminal message in a Burger King advertisement<sup>38</sup>.

Another suggestive advertisement that links buying food with oral sex.

---

<sup>38</sup> Subliminal messages in advertising. (<http://subliminalmanipulation.blogspot.com/2010/09/subliminal-messages-in-advertising-in.html>).





**Figure 3.** A subliminal message hidden in the well-known Facebook homepage site<sup>39</sup>.

The words “SEX” subliminally hidden in the social media home page of Facebook.



**Figure 4.** A subliminal message hidden in the Walt Disney film, Tangled<sup>40</sup>.

---

<sup>39</sup> Subliminal messaging in advertisement. (<http://subliminalmanipulation.blogspot.com/2010/09/subliminal-messages-in-advertising-in.html>)

<sup>40</sup> Another Disney movie, Tangled with a subliminal message. (<http://officeforward.com/another-disney-movie-tangled-with-subliminal-message.html>)

Disney films are notorious for the amount of subliminal messages they contain. It is usually sexually loaded or contains weaponry such as guns, or satanic symbols. This in an attempt to condition young minds to the world of sex and violence from a very young age. The following subliminal message can be seen in the words “SEX” that are subtly shown in the air in a scene in the famous Disney film, the Lion King.



**Figure 5.** A subliminal message in the Disney movie, The Lion King<sup>41</sup>.

---

<sup>41</sup> Walt Disney is Satanic. (<http://www.sodahead.com/topic/watched-walt-disneys-fantasia-hear-music/?link=ibaf&q=&esrc=s>)

---





**Figure 6.** A subliminal portrayal of President Barak Obama as a “saint”<sup>42</sup>.

This figure depicts the President of the United States as some “god-like” figure with light beaming from him. Is this to indoctrinate the nation to accept him as their saviour?

The successes of subliminal mind control have largely been ridiculed by those “in the know” in an attempt to hide its real value from the public. Subliminal messages have been proven to influence the decisions and feelings on a subject. This is a very clever feat of the enemy to indoctrinate and “plant” ideas into the minds of men where they have no control over what gets projected into their minds. In this way, false doctrines could be sent into the subconscious mind thereby making human kind more susceptible thereto when exposed to these doctrines on the conscious level. The subconscious is also used abundantly in mind control.

---

<sup>42</sup>Sex in Politics (<http://subliminalmanipulation.blogspot.com/2010/09/sex-in-politics-word-sex-is-frequently.html>)

## 5. MIND CONTROL

**Mind control** refers to a “process or methods of extreme coercion that result in the individual’s involuntary, robotic compliance”<sup>43</sup>. Mind control is also known as brainwashing, coercive persuasion, thought control or thought reform<sup>44</sup>. Wikipedia provides an interesting definition for mind control<sup>45</sup>:

***“[mind control] refers to a process in which a group or individual systematically uses unethically manipulative methods to persuade others to conform to the wishes of the manipulator(s), often to the detriment of the person being manipulated”.***

***The term has been applied to any tactic, psychological or otherwise, which can be seen as subverting an individual's sense of control over their own thinking, behavior, emotions or decision making.”***

The earliest recorded idea of “brain washing” was recorded by a journalist who worked as a US intelligence agent during the Korean War (part of the Cold War)<sup>46</sup>, Edward Hunter<sup>47</sup>. His article was published on 7 October 1950<sup>48</sup>. It is well known that “mind control experiments” took place during the Cold War. An article that appeared in the US News & World Report on January 24, 1994 labelled these extreme experiments as “The Cold War Experiments”.

The introductory passage of the article states as follows:

---

<sup>43</sup> Brice Taylor. Thanks for the memories: The truth has set me free. The memoirs of Bob Hope’s and Henry Kissinger’s mind-controlled slave. Used as a presidential sex toy and personal computer. USA: Brice Taylor Trust, p. vi.

<sup>44</sup> Mind control. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mind\\_control](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mind_control))

<sup>45</sup> Ibid

<sup>46</sup> Korean War. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Korean\\_War](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Korean_War))

<sup>47</sup> Mind Control. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mind\\_control](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mind_control))

<sup>48</sup> Ibid

**“...U.S government scientists, spurred on by reports that American prisoners of war were being brainwashed in North Korea, were proposing an urgent, top-secret research program on behaviour modification. Drugs, hypnosis, electroshock, lobotomy – all were studied as part of a vast U.S. effort to close the mind control gap.”**

As per the definition, mind control aims to gain complete control over an individual in terms of their thinking, behaviour, emotions and decision making process – in other words to completely control the individual without their consent or them even being aware that they are being controlled. It is a way of **forcefully manipulating** the will of an individual using different techniques and methods.

In order to understand how mind control works, one needs a clear understanding of the concept of creating Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID) as it forms an integral part of how mind programming and total mind control is exerted.

## **6. SATAN’S ATTACK ON THE MIND THROUGH CREATING DID**

The brain, one of the most complex, intricate systems on the planet, can be “programmed” the same way that a computer can. One of the key aspects in mind control involves the creation of Dissociative Identity Disorder within a person and [mind control] uses the principles [of DID] to eventually create and maintain a complex program inside of the mind of a victim.

The control that is gained by the person exerting the control is to such an extent that involves the whole of the person: their **spirit, soul [mind]** and therefore in extension, their **body**. The following section describes Dissociative Identity Disorder and gives an overview of its involvement in mind control.

## 6.1 Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID)

Merriam Websters dictionary defines DID as follows<sup>49</sup>:

***“a disorder that is characterized by the presence of two or more distinct and complex identities or personality states each of which becomes dominant and controls behaviour from time to time to the exclusion of the others and results from disruption in the integrated functions of consciousness, memory, and identity —called also multiple personality, dissociative”***

The same dictionary gives a more comprehensive definition of the disorder<sup>50</sup>:

***“[A] rare condition indicated by the absence of a clear and comprehensive identity. In most cases two or more independent and distinct personality systems develop in the same individual. Each personality may alternately inhabit the person's conscious awareness to the exclusion of the others, but one is usually dominant. The various personalities typically differ from one another in outlook, temperament, and body language and might assume different first names. The condition is generally viewed as resulting from dissociative mental processes—that is, the splitting off from conscious awareness and control of thoughts, feelings, memories, and other mental components in response to situations that are painful, disturbing, or somehow unacceptable to the person experiencing them. Treatment is aimed at integrating the disparate personalities back into a single and unified personality.”***

DID was previously known as Multiple Personality Disorder and was acknowledged when a person presented with two or more personalities or identities where the individual perceives, relates and thinks about the world, the environment and about himself as if he or she were ***two completely different individuals***<sup>51</sup>.

Indeed, DID is the most ***extreme form of the attack on the mind*** launched by the enemy of God.

---

<sup>49</sup> Multiple Personality Disorder (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/multiple+personality+disorder?show=0&t=1382122983>)

<sup>50</sup> Dissociative Identity Disorder.  
(<http://www.merriamwebster.com/dictionary/dissociative%20identity%20disorder>)

<sup>51</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p 15.

DID does not involve any physical abnormality such as brain damage or any other physiological process – this disorder resides purely in the **mind or soul** (and spirit) of the individual<sup>52</sup>. Mankind, being a tripart being<sup>53</sup>, was designed in the Image of God<sup>54</sup> in a **body**, with a **soul** and a **spirit**. In the soul of man resides his **mind**, his **will** and his **emotions**. Therefore it is in the **soul** that one, thinks, feels, and makes choices<sup>55</sup>.

One needs to distinguish between the **soul** and the **personality** of a person. Merriam Webster defines the **personality** as follows<sup>56</sup>:

- “1) the set of emotional qualities, ways of behaving, etc., that makes a person different from other people**
- 2) attractive qualities (such as energy, friendliness, and humor) that make a person interesting or pleasant to be with**
- 3) attractive qualities that make something unusual or interesting”**

Yet another definition of the **personality**<sup>57</sup>:

**“the expression of a person’s unique and relatively enduring pattern of perceiving, thinking about, and relating to himself, his environment, and others.”**

DID occurs as a result of different, distinct personalities that are formed within the same individual. The personality develops in the very early developmental years of a child’s life and by 7 years of age, an individual’s personality is fully developed<sup>58, 59</sup>.

---

<sup>52</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p 15.

<sup>53</sup> According to 1 Thessalonians 5:23

<sup>54</sup> According to Genesis 1:27

<sup>55</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 6.

<sup>56</sup> (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/personality>)

<sup>57</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 7.

<sup>58</sup> (<http://news.softpedia.com/news/Our-Personality-Is-Fully-Developed-By-the-Age-of-7-151093.shtml>)

<sup>59</sup> (<http://www.livescience.com/8432-personality-set-life-1st-grade-study-suggests.html>)

The personality of an individual is the expression of the **will** but this is greatly influenced by what he or she **experiences** in the external environment<sup>60</sup>. As a child grows, his capacity for independent and creative expression gives him his own uniqueness and the potential to develop his own distinct personality<sup>61</sup>. While developing the child draws conclusions about himself, his environment and others in his world which in turn affects how he feels (emotions), thinks (mind) and chooses to express himself (will)<sup>62</sup>.

Personality is thus the culmination of different things: the way it is formed gives origin to the way one makes decisions, how one perceives the world, how one acts in given situations essentially how one “is” in this world. Because this is at the core of the existence of a human being, attacking a human being on this level within himself gives **total control** to the one taking control of the personality of the individual. This is the main goal and core issue of **mind control: whoever controls the mind controls the person**. And this is what Satan and his agents want to achieve: gaining control of God’s beloved creation: His children. The personality thus resides in the soul and is considered the **core of the soul**<sup>63</sup>.

The human brain designed by God Almighty is one of the most complex and intricate structures that can be found on the face of the earth. Neuroscientists have been trying to duplicate and replicate what God designed for decades with little success as to how exactly the brain works as well as how its features fit into each other.

One of the brain’s features is its ability to **automatically program** itself to facilitate everyday living. In this way, the brain is inclined to “program” itself when exposed to the same actions or behaviours in a certain situation so that it will eventually respond automatically in the same specific way when exposed to the situation<sup>64</sup>.

---

<sup>60</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 6.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid. p. 7.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid. p. 7.

<sup>63</sup> Buys Amanda. DID/SRA Advanced Training: October 2013. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 139.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid. p. 8.

For instance, when learning new behaviour, such as driving a car, the early stages of learning how to drive are quite challenging, but after driving for a while the actions becomes “programmed” into the brain and the brain automatically executes all the actions necessary for driving a car without the individual having to “think” about them. When these “brain connections” are formed (just like in the baby) the actions almost becomes automatic. This is also the way in which **habits** are formed and illustrates this function of the brain to **habituate** actions.

**Memory** is another amazing feature of the brain and comprises of the capacity of the mind to recall past events<sup>65</sup>. This can be done in two ways: a **wilful** recall of memories (in other words, by the act of will one can recall memories of events past) and **spontaneous recall** of memory. In spontaneous memory recall information and scenes that are similar to what is being experienced in the current situation are being called forward, for instance when encountering someone in the working place the brain will recall previous encounters with the individual that will enable one to recognize the individual<sup>66</sup>.

Memory affects the **recognition of previously encountered people, objects and places, learning** as it enables the connection of new information to preciously stored knowledge, the **interpretation of current events** in that the **meaning of previous** experiences can be transferred to the current experience<sup>67</sup>.

In this way, when one has almost drowned in a swimming pool when a little child, encountering a swimming pool again will cause the individual to interpret a swimming pool as being dangerous upon being exposed to a swimming pool again. The last thing that memory directly affects is ones’ **emotional response** to current events as ones’ emotional response is directly related to ones interpretation of a current event<sup>68</sup>.

---

<sup>65</sup> Buys Amanda. DID/SRA Advanced Training: October 2013. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 8.

<sup>66</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 9.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid.

<sup>68</sup> Ibid.

This is a very important feature as past memories will in other words directly affect how one feels emotionally upon every similar future event that one encounters.

The brain also has a capacity for imagination, contemplation and mental imagery that is **under the will** of the person. Under normal circumstances the brain is able to distinguish between what is memory and what is fantasy in “real world” experiences<sup>69</sup>. Emotions on the other hand do not “distinguish” between what is occurring in the real world and what is fantasy<sup>70</sup>: another important feature to note.

For instance, when one imagines or relives a memorable past experience (for instance a special moment with a loved one) one experiences or relives the emotions attached to this event without it physically occurring in the natural. The same goes for unpleasant experiences, like when one relives a fearful situation, all the emotions are experienced without the person being in that fearful situation.

Another feature of the brain is its **ability to dissociate**. This happens under normal situations in that when an individual is so engaged in an internal mental process that he/she “loses touch” with the external environment<sup>71</sup>. For instance, during “day-dreaming” or when one is driving on a long stretch of road thinking of completely something else than the present situation, also called “highway hypnosis”. This is normal dissociation and is only possible when the brain is busy doing “automatic” activities known to it or rather “programmed” into it (like driving or sewing already a part of the brain’s “normal” patterns) without the mind really being “present”. The moment the brain encounters something out of the ordinary, like a car suddenly stops in traffic while a person was day dreaming, the brain summons the attention of the mind so that the person is brought back in touch with his/her the external physical surroundings<sup>72</sup>.

---

<sup>69</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 9.

<sup>70</sup> Ibid.

<sup>71</sup> Ibid. .

<sup>72</sup> Ibid.



This type of dissociation is normal and does not disrupt the normal functioning of an individual – it is part of the normal functioning of the everyday life. In pathological dissociation, the dissociation lies on a continuum that progresses to conditions that become increasingly more complex and is disruptive to normal functioning<sup>73</sup>. DID is the most extreme form of dissociation and results in ***the splitting of the soul***<sup>74</sup>.

## 6.2. How Abnormal Dissociation Occurs

Pathological dissociation occurs as a result of trauma induced and is dependent upon two factors: the severity of the abuse and the creativity of the person<sup>75</sup>. Dissociation occurs when a small child experiences an event that is so traumatic and carries seemingly unbearable implications that he/she is unable to “cope” with the situation. The child cannot physically “get away” and therefore uses the brain’s ability to cope through dissociation to “escape” the traumatic experience<sup>76</sup>. The child experiencing the trauma will thus escape is “within” him or herself.

The way the brain was designed by God allows the traumatized victim to escape the traumatic event or experience by dissociating: ***dividing his consciousness*** in a way that essentially creates “two selves” so only part of him has to endure the trauma of the external environment while his Core Self is shut off from the awareness of the event<sup>77</sup>. In this way, different aspects of the traumatic event are “stored” in different parts of him or herself. For instance the emotional pain will be stored in one part, the experience in another and the memory of the event in yet another part. As the trauma is repeated these “parts” of self can form into complete distinct “personalities”.

---

<sup>73</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p.10.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid

<sup>76</sup> Riggs Doug (2012). Articles and Information. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p.10.

<sup>77</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, 11.

This “escape from the immediate situation” thus then takes the form of developing a variety of personalities (or “Alters”<sup>78</sup>) in order to cope with different aspects of trauma<sup>79</sup>. In this sense dissociation is a normal response to a brutal, vicious, traumatic experience<sup>80</sup>.

Dissociation should however be distinguished from “repressing” a memory where the memory might be stored in the brain in such a way that the whole event can be recalled at a later stage. If someone has dissociative capabilities they will dissociate **while the trauma** is happening and store the event in perhaps different “personalities” inside of themselves and they will have partial awareness or no awareness of the trauma happening to them<sup>81</sup>.

Doug Riggs summarized dissociation as follows<sup>82</sup>:

***“Dissociation involves a sort of “mental going away” of one part of a person’s memory and behaviors while another part steps in, which may or may not be amnesiac to the others....Dissociated aspects may be emotions, thoughts or physical sensations and any given individual may have specific areas of disconnection. For example they may not remember a specific incident of abuse but they are well aware of the emotions that went with it knowing why they exist. They may remember an incident but be completely unaware of their emotions during it. When it becomes more comprehensive these groups of experiences or emotions are organized into what is called alternate personalities.*”**

---

<sup>78</sup> Alter Identity: A projection of the soul that is separated by dissociation from the Original Self or any of the Primary Parts; a preferred term to “alter personality” though often used interchangeably. A divided part of the soul that may have a self perception drastically different from the Primary Parts. Also, an alter personality has a relatively enduring pattern of perceiving, thinking about, and relating to self, others and the environment. Taken from: Hawkins Tom. A New Approach to DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, 171.

<sup>79</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans: SRA/DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 17.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid.

<sup>81</sup> Ibid.

<sup>82</sup> Riggs Doug (2012). Articles and Information. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 10.

***In a brief description, I would say that a recurrent abusive situation drives a frightened child into “mentally going away” and the “place” to where they go then becomes more fully developed, almost like a completely different person. This person holds the terrible memories of what has happened, while the original child is spared having to live with that knowledge. I have often used cupboards as an example of compartments in the mind; some alters having a strong, thick wall of amnesia about the others and some having only a gauze curtain. In effect then, DID can be said to be a fragmenting of the mind, will and emotions which has been cemented in through establishing great fear. This fear can be of abusers, what has happened in the past or what may happen in the future, to ones’ self or loved ones.”***

From the passage it can be seen that an enduring amnesiac “barrier” is put in place to keep two created “selves” separate from awareness of each other. When trauma occurs again, the Core Self can escape again by: sending the previously created “part” out to handle the environment (that was previously “created” to handle the situation) or by creating another split in consciousness, or another new self, to handle the trauma<sup>83</sup>. Over time these divided “segments of consciousness” develop into separate identities able to operate independently within the person as divided portions of the soul<sup>84</sup>.

In this way, several identities are established within the same person thereby the previous name “Multiple Personality Disorder”. In essence this is the brain’s coping mechanism in order to deal with the severity of abuse that occurs at a very young age. Dissociation is based upon the **Hegelian Dialectic** that is used by the Elite of the Illuminati, and is a foundational principle in the occult.

---

<sup>83</sup> Riggs Doug (2012). Articles and Information. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 10.

<sup>84</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 12.

### 6.3. The Hegelian Dialectic

This is also called the “Anti-Human principle” and forms the basis for the way that dissociation works. This Hegelian Dialect is the same process or system that is implemented all across the world at the moment to prepare the “masses” for the New World Order. It is a three step process and works by thesis, antithesis and synthesis<sup>85</sup>:

- 1) The first step (thesis) is to **create a problem**
- 2) The second step (antithesis) is to **generate opposition to the problem** (fear, panic, hysteria)
- 3) The third step (synthesis) is to **offer the solution** to the problem created by step one:
  - a. A change, which would have been impossible to impose upon the people without the proper psychological conditioning achieve in stages one and two.

This principle is followed in **creating DID** and starts with creating a problem – the abuse or assault (thesis). The opposition to the created “problem” is that there is a split in the personality (antithesis) as an answer to the thesis. Chaos results and out of this chaos a “new order” is created, a new personality: the “presenting personality (synthesis)<sup>86</sup>”.

According to extensive research done by Amanda Buys and Doug Riggs, both experts in the field of DID/SRA counseling, this principle is how multiple personalities are formed within the same individual. The Hegelian dynamic begins with the first assault and spit creating antithesis. Out of the chaos a “new order” is created that is amnesic to all that occurred before (another personality – “the presenter”)<sup>87</sup>.

---

<sup>85</sup> Buys Amanda. DID/SRA Advanced Training: October 2013. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 104.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid.

<sup>87</sup> Ibid.

Trauma is thus induced early in a child's life and as a coping mechanism the brain dissociates certain parts of the experience into different personalities within the same individual<sup>88</sup>. One author<sup>89</sup> summarizes DID in the following way:

***“DID is perhaps the most creative, intelligent and elegant coping mechanism and survival technique humans are capable of creating. The foundation of DID is ‘dissociation’ – a psycho-physiological response that enables a person to block especially horrible experiences such as child abuse from his/her memory.”***

The primary reason for the different “identities” created is a **survival mechanism**. Other identities are created to cope with the severe situations and these identities may differ from each other in that each one has a different function. DID is created in the very early years of life showing something of the character of the enemy of God: he attacks the mind of innocent young ones with a brutality insomuch that their minds are overwhelmed with the trauma that they literally split off from itself. He is a malicious, ruthless destroyer who would stop at nothing to get his ways and to gain control over the children of God. It is no wonder that Jesus Christ warned that the enemy is like a roaring lion seeking someone to devour (1 Peter 5:8).

Riggs<sup>90</sup> further explains:

***“For those who have experienced what I have called more “normal” trauma, such as physical, emotional or sexual abuse of one kind or another, there is usually just one group of alternate personalities, several to perhaps a dozen. For those who have experienced cult related or intergenerational trauma, there can be a set of groups of alters, called systems, with a number of alters easily into the hundreds.”***

---

<sup>88</sup> Riggs Doug (2012) Articles and information. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 9.

<sup>89</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans: SRA/DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 18.

<sup>90</sup> Riggs Doug (2012). Articles and Information. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 11.

The Hebrew word in the Old Testament for **evil is ra'** – the root word (Ra'a) means to **spoil by braking into pieces**<sup>91</sup>. One can see the correlation between the evil character of the enemy of God in DID: his workings literally “break” children into little pieces as their conscious processes in their mind are split. Put in another way, during unbearable torture, a group of mental activities breaks away from the “main stream” consciousness and functions as a separate unit – as though belonging to a different person<sup>92</sup>. This, of course, influences every aspect of a person’s life.

The following symptoms are experienced by people who have DID<sup>93</sup>:

- Memory loss
- Time loss
- Trance like behavior<sup>94</sup>
- Hearing voices (either **demonic or alters**)
- History of headaches – switching to different personalities often causes headaches
- Switches
- Hypnotizability<sup>95</sup> – because of the dissociative nature of the disorder these individuals are very prone to being hypnotized
- Changes in handwriting
- Cognizance of internal children or identities inside of him/herself
- Frequent change of clothing – to fit the personality presenting
- Very few clothing ensembles – some DID victims may tire of the bickering between identities inside of themselves so they reduce their clothing to only a few items
- Sense of deprivation – they feel they have missed out on life
- Inordinate desire to please others

---

<sup>91</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans: SRA/DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 20.

<sup>92</sup> Ibid.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid.

<sup>94</sup> Hawkins Tom. A New Approach to DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 19.

<sup>95</sup> Ibid.

- Intelligent and creative – necessary in order for a person to be able to dissociate
- Highly developed imagination – to cope within their own safe world
- A desire to play with stuffed animals – DID victims did not get a chance to play with stuffed animals during childhood
- Emotions disconnected from cognitive thoughts

In addition to creating alter personalities to cope with trauma these alter personalities may employ other “coping skills” in order to lessen the impact of what they are experiencing. Some of these coping mechanisms include<sup>96</sup>:

- Partial dissociation: separation of one or more, but not all, senses from normal consciousness (“I will see it but not feel it”)
- Imagination
  - To numb a particular sense (“I have leather skin therefore I do not feel this”)
  - To change ones sense of connection to the body (such as “floating above ones’ body”)
  - To change the meaning of the event (“I am special that is why he does this to me”)
  - To change some aspect of the alters’ identity (“I am a teenager not a child” or “I am male not female” etc.) in order to cope with the situation

One can see from observing the “fruits” of DID that a person whole life is affected and Satan not only takes control of the mind but influences the person physically, emotionally and on every other level of their existence. The minds “natural coping mechanisms” is something to be marveled at.

---

<sup>96</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 12.

The brain works in such a powerful way so that each “alter personality” that is formed is able to **adapt to the extent that is necessary** to be able to cope or handle the situation being experienced<sup>97</sup>. What an amazing feature created by a Loving God! In this way the mind not only creates separate identities but also allows for these identities to be shaped in such a way as to be able to handle the situation in which it founds itself<sup>98</sup>. This is the mind's natural coping mechanism and it is so powerful as to avoid destruction and damage as much as possible and to preserve and protect the individual.

The result of this function of the mind is so astounding in that the one alter personality will have abilities that another doesn't, for instance: the one alter might be able to balance a checkbook while another alter may not<sup>99</sup>. Each of these alter personalities is created in such a way that they have their own life experiences, their own identities and their own memories that develop so distinctly from each other (and most of the time the “alters” are unaware of the other alter personalities present within the same individual) that they are completely different personalities with different sets of skills within the same person<sup>100</sup>. One must distinguish between the different types of identities (or personalities) that are formed within the individual in order to understand the role of each during mind control programming. The following types of identities can be distinguished<sup>101</sup>.

## **6.4. Types of presenting systems**

### **6.4.1 Core Identity**

The “Original Self” conceived in the womb from which all of the other identities have split off.

---

<sup>97</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 13.

<sup>98</sup> Ibid.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid.

<sup>100</sup> Ibid.

<sup>101</sup> Hawkins Tom. A New Approach to DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, pp. 8-10.



#### **6.4.2 Host Identity**

The identity who is in executive control of the body the most; usually a primary identity representing the Core.

#### **6.4.3 Primary identities**

The parts of the person who carry the strongest sense of “self” being most closely related to the Core, both in derivation and view of life. They carry the primary beliefs and commitments of the Core; usually includes the Host.

#### **6.4.4 Presenters**

The group of alters who normally handles daily living in non-traumatic circumstances; includes the Host.

#### **6.4.5 Function alters**

Alters created to perform **specific functions** unhindered by the effects of the trauma or to “protect” certain talents or encapsulate certain emotions, positive or negative; often serve as presenters.

#### **6.4.6. Victims**

Alters whose sole purpose was to **handle trauma**.

#### **6.4.7. Protectors**

Alters created to protect the person from any perceived danger and/or further abuse; may intervene to take abuse in place of weaker alters; often carry a lot of anger and can be aggressive.

#### **6.4.8. Controllers**

Alters who determine which alter will come out at a given time to handle a given situation.

#### **6.4.9. Persecutors**

Alters who have identified with the motives and agenda of the abuser and punish the others alters, internally or externally, in the absence of the abuser when the alters fail to measure up to the abuser's expectations.

#### **6.4.10. Reporter**

An alter who serves to keep track of the facts and relate them without emotion; may also be called "narrator," "moderator," "historian," etc.

#### **6.4.11. Inner Self Helper (ISH)**

An internal alter who is devoted to the good of the person and works to maintain internal stability and well-being within the system of alters; often provides helpful information to guide therapy.

#### **6.4.12. Caretaker**

An alter who watches over, and may speak for, very young alters.

#### **6.4.13. Fragment**

An identity with an extremely brief life history and role, without a fully developed personality.

#### **6.4.14. Shell**

An alter through whom the personalities and perspectives of other alters can present. The resulting "hand in glove" type of presentation serves to maintain a sense of consistent identity to the outside world and a continuous short-term memory for the individual, thus minimizing the sense of time loss and switching. While the shell functions as the speaker, it usually has no developed personality of its own. Sometimes a shell may serve solely to provide "housing for a demon", which can then express itself through a human voice.

During **mind programming** each of these alter personalities, of which there are many many more, are **deliberately formed** during programming and does not result just from dissociation itself. The role hereof will be discussed elsewhere in this chapter.

## 6.5. Types of presenting systems

The way in which personalities are presented in the everyday life can differ with regards to other “identities” being aware of each other. The presenting patterns serve to let the individual cope with everyday life and are generally comprised of between 5-8 identities<sup>102</sup>. These presenter identities are generally unaware of the trauma that was experienced so that they can function “normally”. The presenting systems can be as follows<sup>103</sup>:

- One identity at a time with no co-consciousness – only one presenter identity is “out” at a time
- One identity in control with other presenter’s co-conscious
- Shell presentation – the host personality is used as a “shell” through which the other identities present
- Group presentation – all the alter personalities are “present” or co-conscious simultaneously and share control of the body at the same time – this presenting system is confusing and difficult to detect.

In other words identities or alters may be aware of each other or may even be completely unaware that other alters exists. Alters can be set up to know one another (co-conscious) and be aware of what the other alter is thinking; they could not to know of the others existence (two-way amnesia); or one could know another alter but the second one does not know the first (by setting up one-way mirrors), this is called one-way amnesia.

---

<sup>102</sup> Hawkins Tom. A New Approach to DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, pp. 8-10.

<sup>103</sup> Ibid.

Alters could be set up to come “on top of each other” (co-presence) at the front of the mind and hold the body together<sup>104</sup>. For instance a “Christian” alter will cuss without knowing where the word came from or a child will come up behind the adult – the adult might begin to speak like a child.

Programmers will many times build in “no-talk” walls between alters so that visibility is walled off and this system is not part of normal amnesia. This is the type of complexities that can exist within one individual.

## **6.6. Internal organization of identities**

All of these identities are “organized” in a system within an individual. If the mind is not being “programmed” the same mind who created all of the alter personalities organizes them within as to create some form of structure and stability for the person – this is often done through **mental imagery** in the **unconscious mind**<sup>105</sup>. This “structure” is often referred to by the person as their “inner world” and serves to<sup>106</sup>:

- Provide an organizational framework
- Provide a authority structure
- A prescribed method for moving in and out of consciousness and participation in external life
- Whatever other operational dynamics are needed

In order for the mind to cope with all of the alter personalities, it tries to create order out of chaos and structure the different personalities into some kind of network within the mind. This is done naturally without any programming of the mind taking place, although in mind programming this process of organizing is very directed as will be seen.

---

<sup>104</sup> Hawkins Tom. A New Approach to DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, pp. 8-10.

<sup>105</sup> Hawkins Tom. A New Approach to DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, pp.10-13.

<sup>106</sup> Ibid. p. 11

DID differs from other disorders in that distinct identities can be differentiated that differs from someone who is delusional or hallucinating<sup>107</sup>. It differs from mood disorder in that the along with mood changes there is a change in attitude, beliefs, preferences, talents, gender etc.<sup>108</sup>.

It is also important to distinguish between DID and schizophrenia. Schizophrenia is a chronic form of psychosis due to a biochemical/genetic disorder of the brain, these patients do not have other personalities<sup>109</sup>. Schizophrenia is also not caused by trauma, and does not involve amnesia and flashbacks<sup>110</sup>.

One can see that by using dissociation the mind is able to protect itself from severe trauma. Dissociation, a normal function of the brain, can be used by the enemy in the form of a **continual ritual**, as in the case of MONARCH Mind Control programs, where the individual's ability to dissociate is **deliberately induced** and the brain is then programmed accordingly to create a bondage so deep that the individual can never escape from it by him or herself. During the deliberate programming of the mind **demons are deliberately programmed** into the different layers of personalities<sup>111</sup>.

This presents an extreme way of gaining control over human kind. Satan attacks the mind to such an extent that the "core inner self" as created by God is distorted so that Satan and his agents can have permanent "access" to the individual. They can exert their control over him/her so that they are not able to exert their own will. This is done by exploiting the phenomenal mechanisms which God put in place within His creation and beloved human race. Gaining this type of control is a phenomenally cunning act of the age old enemy of God and it literally places a human being in the hands and under the control of the enemy. Jesus Christ warned that Satan is out to steal, **kill and destroy**, but that He came to give **life** till its fullest measure, hallelujah!

---

<sup>107</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 24.

<sup>108</sup> Ibid.

<sup>109</sup> Ibid. p. 32.

<sup>110</sup> Ibid.

<sup>111</sup> Riggs Doug (2012). Articles and Information. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 13.

***“The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.”***

***John 10:10***

Satan destroys God’s people by employing methods used in ***Satanic Ritual Abuse*** (SRA) which involves extreme measures of abuse of children at a very young age in order to create DID. SRA is “any ***systematic pattern*** or practice by an individual or group toward children or adults that constitutes abuse of power in order to control and harm the victim<sup>112</sup>. SRA is torture and is a “calculated effort on the part of the perpetrators to systematically brainwash victims through physical, emotional, sexual and spiritual violation<sup>113</sup>.”

The enemy is so cunning in that even after employing these severely destructive and abusive measures of torture and cruel behaviour towards innocent children that he gently covers it up through his human agents in positions of authority upon the earth. In her book, *He came to set the captive free*, Rebecca Brown extensively speaks about how the human agents of Satan in positions like police officers, high political figures etc. are used to cover up and nullify events that took place during SRA should they be exposed or evidence for them found<sup>114</sup>.

The presence and use of trauma plays an enormous role in creating DID. Trauma is a way in which the enemy tries to destroy the children of God as it goes beyond what their normal makeup was designed for. Trauma is a very important tool in the hands of the enemy. The following section discusses trauma and its role in creating DID as part of obtaining control over the human mind.

---

<sup>112</sup> Hawkins Tom. A New Approach to DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, pp.10-13.

<sup>113</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, 24.

<sup>114</sup> Rebecca Brown (1986) He came to set the captives free. Chinos CA: Chick Publications

## 6.7 Trauma in the use of creating DID

Trauma in its essence attacks a person's **sense of self** and the concept of predictability of the world and feelings of helplessness and powerlessness accompanies traumatic events<sup>115</sup>. The root word for trauma is "**wound**"<sup>116</sup> and one can see the correlation between the enemy that creates a "**wound**" in the soul of a person when they are exposed to trauma.

This is the eventual goal behind trauma used to create DID – to would the child, true to the character of the enemy. If the trauma occurs in the early childhood the "sense of self", development of trust as well as the ability to communicate emotions into words is affected. How crippling to think that the little one will grow up with a distorted sense of self, unable to trust anyone or to let anyone know what he/she is experiencing. This is the work and the goal of the enemy – it leaves the person totally helpless and vulnerable to the whims of the enemy.

If trauma is not dealt with or if a person does not have the adequate means of resolving the traumatic experience, they may be overwhelmed with the experience and will experience all sorts of alterations in their psychological and physical functioning and their immune system may be weakened that will lead to all sorts of illnesses<sup>117</sup>.

On a spiritual level trauma will cause a variety of spiritual crisis's or problems<sup>118</sup>. Issues that target God as not loving, powerful etc. then rise up as questions about why God did not stop the trauma etc. Trauma many times leads people away from God after they had the experience, instead of trusting Him, they deny His existence or begin to question His love for them. This is a very powerful tool in the hands of the enemy.

---

<sup>115</sup> Rebecca Brown (1986) He came to set the captives free. Chinos CA: Chick Publications.

<sup>116</sup> Trauma.( <http://dictionary.reference.com/browse/trauma>)

<sup>117</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 26.

<sup>118</sup> Ibid.

Trauma is stored in the memory different from “normal” memories. The brain stores trauma initially on a non-verbal sensory level as sensory information (what was seen, smelt, sounds, feelings of body sensations etc.). Memories of the trauma tend to be experienced as fragments of the sensory components and the trauma itself might even be fragmented, and awareness of the trauma is stored in these different segments<sup>119</sup>. The memories may be dissociated, repressed or denied as part of coping with the event. Prolonged dissociation, as a result of traumatic experiences, can result in the change of a person’s sense of identity<sup>120</sup>.

All of these accounts describe the handling of trauma in a “normal” sense for an adult. The personality of an adult still remains intact although the repressed or dissociated memories may influence their life and health in severe ways.

In this way, DID cannot be developed in an adult as a result of trauma – it can only result in response to trauma experienced in the early developing years of life<sup>121</sup>. Adults that have DID can develop more personalities and further dissociate as a result of their ability to cope in this way – but this ability can only exist as a result of severe trauma during childhood years<sup>122</sup>. DID thus has its onset only in childhood as a result of childhood trauma. Satan can thus only obtain control over an individual in this way by attacking the mind at a young age by putting them through severe trauma. DID is used as a tool in mind programming which is the premise of the next section.

## **7. MIND CONTROL/MIND PROGRAMMING**

In using DID as a tool or mechanism, mind control and mind programming can start. This is done by deliberately programming the mind from a very young age. The mind is conditioned and trained by the person wanting to invoke mind control. Different mechanisms are used to gain entry and control over the mind.

---

<sup>119</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 27.

<sup>120</sup> Ibid.

<sup>121</sup> Ibid. p. 32.

<sup>122</sup> Ibid.



## 7.1 Creating a split in the mind through behavioral conditioning

When a baby is very young it instinctively does things that are considered “normal” for a baby – for instance, when a baby is hungry, or wet its diaper, it will cry. In a “normal” situation, the mother or primary caregiver will come running as to help the baby and take care of whatever need they might have. This gives the baby a sense of security and worth and allows them to feel “safe” in this world. The baby knows that by crying they will get their needs met.

With mind control, when trying to create a split in the mind, the mental frameworks of babies are distorted by creating situations that are true yet cannot be true at the same time. With the example above, once the baby has learned that the way to get their needs met is to cry, “programmers” who want to carry out mind control will deliberately not help the baby if they cry until it has stopped crying<sup>123</sup>.

The baby is left with their “need” like being hungry, and if left for long enough the baby will **believe that they are going to die**. After a while the baby will stop crying **ready to die** of hunger/exhaustion. Then, as soon as the baby stops crying the programmer will come and meet their needs thereby creating a conflict in the baby’s mind as the help they were taught to come when crying only came after they stopped crying. This creates a conflict within the mind of the small baby<sup>124</sup>.

The conflict situation now is that when the baby cries, help sometimes comes **and** if he/she stops crying help comes. Now, the baby has two sets of “frameworks” to live by. Now a “split” happens in the mind of the young child: the first pattern or the “norm” in the conscious mind believes that when there is a need the baby will cry, the part of the mind that then splits off believes that when the baby stops crying the help will come. A barrier is created around the split off part of the mind that is either a dissociative (belongs to someone else) or an amnesic barrier (it did not happen)<sup>125</sup>.

---

<sup>123</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans: SRA/DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 62.

<sup>124</sup> Ibid. p. 63.

<sup>125</sup> Ibid.

After reinforcing this pattern the child will start to cry and if no one comes the “split off” part will “take over” and the child will stop crying and someone will come and meet their needs<sup>126</sup>. In this way the baby has found a way to survive that doesn’t make sense to them – by having two separate mind sets about the same situation<sup>127</sup>. In this way many different horrible things are done to babies in order for them to create separate mind sets in order to be able to cope with situations.

Over a period of several years the baby has to come up with new frameworks of reference in order to be able to cope with whatever is being done to them<sup>128</sup>. They not only have to survive it they have to **make sense of it** – another function of the mind. In this way each new mindset that is created is a way of making sense of what is happening to them<sup>129</sup>. In this way, whatever the “mindset” that they are in at the moment, what they believe in that particular instance, is what is true for them. To put it in other words, the part of the person that is in control of the body at that moment will act according to the mindset that belongs to that part of the person<sup>130</sup>. In this way a “split” in the mind is created.

## 7.2 Dividing the spirit

During severe trauma induced, especially by the parents, the **spirit** of the human being can also be split. From Biblical accounts it is clear that man is made in the Image of God (Genesis 1:27) and this Image of God resides in the spirit of the human being. This part of the spirit where the **image of God** into which the human being was made resides is called the **Ne’sh’mah**.

Strong’s Hebrew 5397 meaning for NESHAMAH<sup>131</sup> is:

- “Breath”

---

<sup>126</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans: SRA/DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 63.

<sup>127</sup> Ibid.

<sup>128</sup> Ibid. p. 62.

<sup>129</sup> Ibid.

<sup>130</sup> Ibid. p. 64.

<sup>131</sup> Buys Amanda (2013) SRA/DID Advanced Training. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 139.

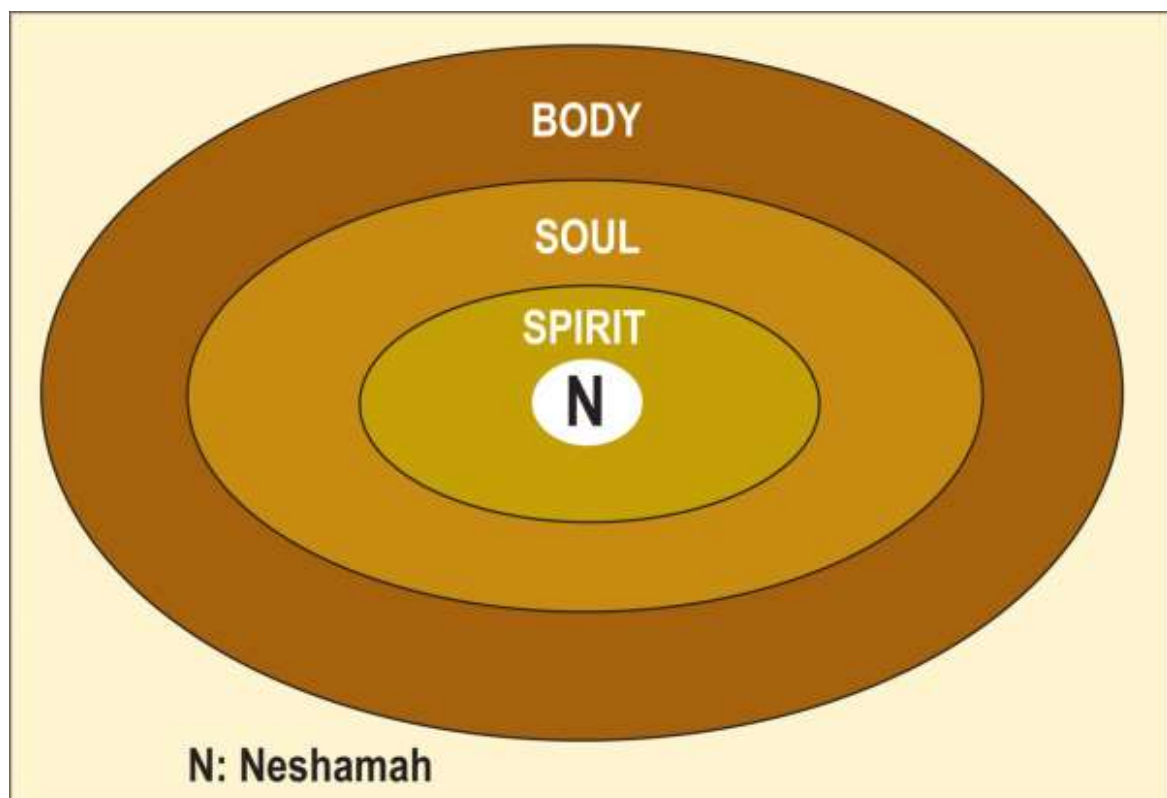
- “Spirit” (not Ru’ach)
- Neshamah is the God-created breath of life

References to Ne’sh’mah can be found in the following Scripture:

***“Then the Lord GOD formed man from the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life [NESHAMAH], and man became a living being.”***

***Genesis 2:7***

The NESHAMAH is our God-given capacity to know, perceive and understand. Like the personality is the core part of the soul, it can be said that Neshamah is the core of the spirit. Schematically it can be illustrated as follows:



**Figure 7.** An illustration of the core of the soul, NESHAMAH<sup>132</sup>

---

<sup>132</sup> Doug Riggs (2012) Articles and Information. Kanaan South Africa: Ministries, p. 16.

In the Book of Proverbs the Bible talks about the NESHAMAH, the part of the human being that comes directly from God, as the **Lamp of the Lord**:

***“The spirit [NESHAMAH] of man is the lamp of the LORD searching all his innermost parts.”***

***Proverbs 20:27***

The Bible further describes NESHAMAH in the following verses:

***“But there is [a vital force] a spirit [of intelligence] in man and the breath [NESHAMAH] of the Almighty gives man understanding.”***

***Job 32:8***

***“It is the Spirit of God that made me [which has stirred me up] and the breath [NESHAMAH] of the Almighty that gives me life [which inspires me].”***

***Job 33:4***

From these Scriptures it can be seen that the NESHAMAH of the human being is the part of the human spirit that enables man to know and connect with God and His life<sup>133</sup>. During severe trauma induced during mind programming the spirit can be divided, so that the core of the spirit remains intact (the part that contains the breath of God – the **very core part of the human being**) but the rest can be split off to no longer serve God or to even hate God<sup>134</sup>.

Mind programming takes place in the soul, the domain of the mind and the intellect where all programming is **structured**, but all programming is **anchored** in this “split off part” of the **human spirit** that is dissociated, defiled or not yet sanctified (2 Corinthians 7:1, 1 Thessalonians 5:23)<sup>135</sup>. It is in this way that **demons** are attached to the human spirit – they are programmed into these “split off parts” of the human spirit.

---

<sup>133</sup> Doug Riggs (2012) Articles and Information. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 16.

<sup>134</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans: SRA/DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 64.

<sup>135</sup> Doug Riggs (2012) Articles and Information. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 17.

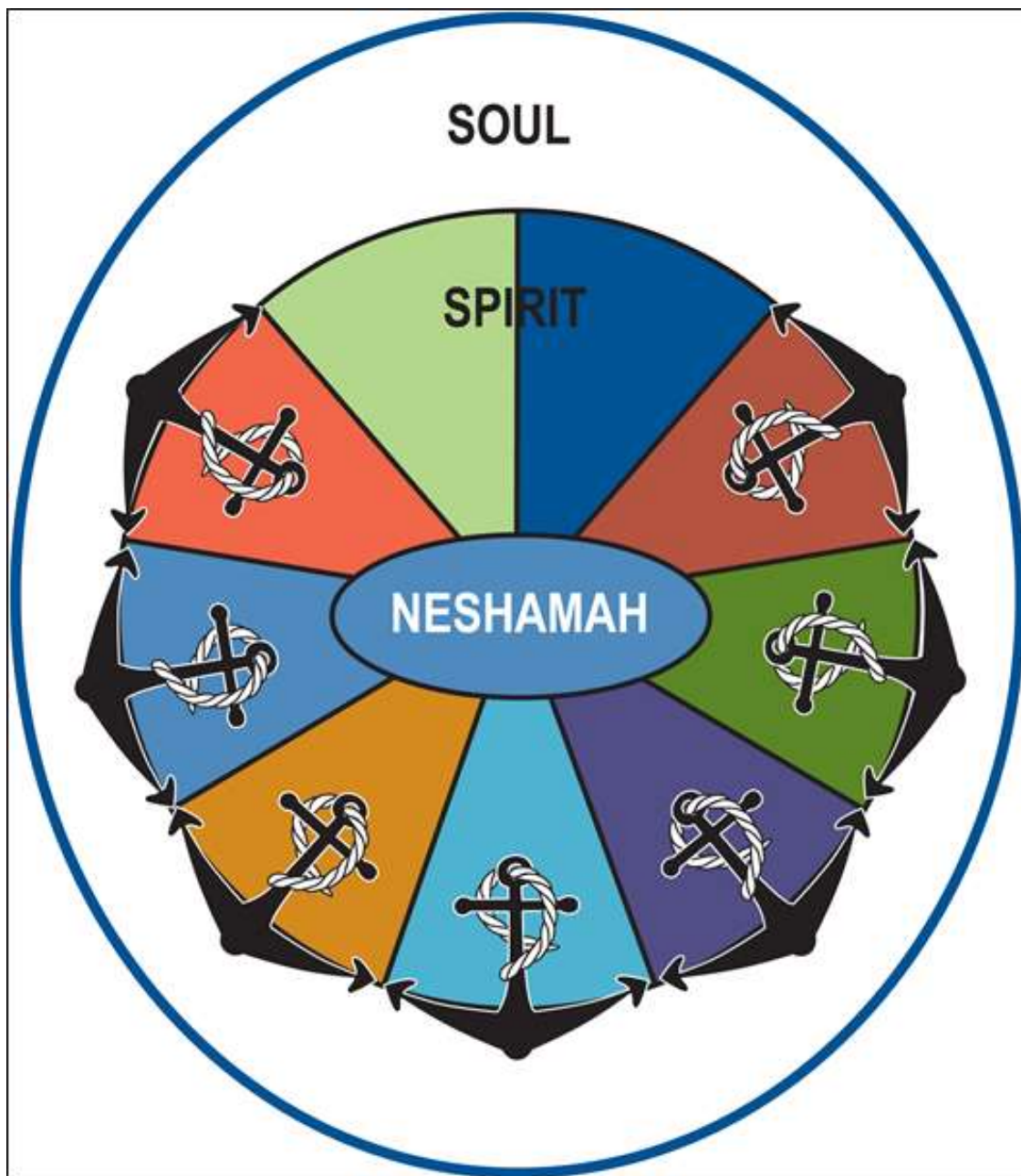
Doug Riggs<sup>136</sup>, an expert in the field of DID/SRA counseling concludes:

***“It is thus at the level of the spirit where generational principalities and powers are attached which drives the programming and so profoundly affects the mind, emotions and will.”***

The following figure illustrates how the spirit of the human being is used as the “anchor point” for demonic principalities and powers which “drives” the mind programming:

---

<sup>136</sup>Doug Riggs (2012) Articles and Information. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 17.



**Figure 8.** Anchors (black arrows) within the spirit of the human being responsible for controlling the mind programs in the soul (mind, will and emotions) of the individual.

### 7.3 How does mind control work?

Another definition of mind control is given as “a systematic process used to influence a person’s identity (thoughts, emotions and beliefs) and to form an identity in the person that conforms to the belief system and needs of the controller<sup>137</sup>.” This “systematic process” has been perfected by those who have been practicing this form of “art” throughout the 20<sup>th</sup> century.

#### 7.3.1 A history on mind control

An article on MIND CONTROL sheds some light and gives some insights into mind programming<sup>138</sup>:

#### **PROJECT MIND CONTROL: NAZI MIND CONTROL<sup>139</sup>**

**By Ron Patton**

##### **A brief history of control**

The Mystery Religions of ancient Egypt, Greece, India and Babylon helped lay the foundation for occultism, meaning “hidden knowledge”. One of the earliest writings given reference to occultism is the *Egyptian Book of the Dead*, a compilation of rituals explicitly describing methods of torture and intimidation (to create trauma), the use of potions (drugs) and the casting of spells (hypnotism), ultimately resulting in the total enslavement of the initiate. These have been the main ingredients for a part of occultism known as Satanism, throughout the ages. During the 13<sup>th</sup> Century, the Roman Catholic Church increased and solidified its dominion deeply entrenching itself under the veil of various esoteric groups.

---

<sup>137</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 47.

<sup>138</sup> Brice Taylor. Thanks for the memories: The truth has set me free. The memoirs of Bob Hope’s and Henry Kissinger’s mind-controlled slave. Used as a presidential sex toy and personal computer. USA: Brice Taylor Trust, p. x.

<sup>139</sup> Ibid. P. vii-xviii.

In 1776, a Bavarian Jesuit by the name of Adam Wieshaupt was commissioned by the House of Rothschild to centralize the power base of the Mystery religions into what is commonly known as the Illuminati, meaning “Enlightened Ones”. This was an amalgamation of powerful occultic bloodlines, elite secret societies and influential Masonic fraternities, with the desire to construct the framework for a “New World Order.” The outward goal of this Utopia was to bring forth universal happiness to the human race. However, their underlying intention was to gradually increase control over the masses, thus becoming masters of the planet.

The whole agenda and idea behind mind control is elicited in this section: The New World Order was created in order to be able to control the masses, and they employed every technique imaginable to gain this control. This is explained in the following chapter.

### **The Anglo Alliance<sup>140</sup>**

By the 19<sup>th</sup> century, Great Britain and Germany were recognized as the primary geographic areas of Illuminati control. It then should be of little surprise to know the first work in Behavioral Science research was established in England in 1882, while much of the early medical and psychiatric techniques involved in mind control were pioneered at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute in Germany. The Tavistock Institute of Human Relations was set up in London in 1921 to study the “breaking point” of humans. Kurt Lewin, a German psychologist, became the Director of the Tavistock Institute in 1932, about the same time Nazi Germany was increasing its research into neuropsychology, parapsychology and multi-generational occultism...Top Nazi officer, Heinrich Himmler, was in charge of a scientific project called *Lebensborn*, which included selective breeding and adoption of children, a

---

<sup>140</sup> Brice Taylor. Thanks for the memories: The truth has set me free. The memoirs of Bob Hope’s and Henry Kissinger’s mind-controlled slave. Used as a presidential sex toy and personal computer. USA: Brice Taylor Trust, p. viii.



peculiarly large number of twins among them. The purpose of the program was to create a super race (Ayrans) who would have total allegiance to the cause of the Third Reich (New Order). Much of the preliminary experimentation concerning genetic engineering and behavior modification was conducted by Dr Josef Mengele at Auschwitz, where he coldly analyzed the effects of trauma-bonding, eye coloring and “twinning” upon his victims. Besides the insidious surgical experimentation performed at the concentration camps, some of the children were subjected to massive amounts of electroshock.

Sadly, many of them did not survive the brutality. Concurrently, “brain washing” was carried out on inmates at Dachau, who were placed under hypnosis and given the hallucinogenic drug mescaline. During the war, parallel behavioral research was led by Dr George Estabrooks of Colgate University. His involvement in the army, CID, FBI and other agencies remains shrouded in secrecy. However, Estabrooks would occasionally “slip” and discuss his work involving the creation of ***hypno-programmed couriers*** and ***hypnotically induced split personalities***.

## **Evolution of Project MKULTRA**

With the CIA and the National Security Council firmly established [by the Illuminati], the first in a series of covert brainwashing programs were initiated by the Navy in the fall of 1947. Project CHATTER was developed in response to the Soviet’s “successes” through the use of “truth drugs”. This rationale, however, was simply a cover story if the program were to be exposed. The research focused on the identification and testing of such drugs for use in interrogations and the recruitment of agents. The project was officially terminated in 1953. The CIA decided to expand their efforts in the area of behavior modification, with the advent of Project BLUEBIRD, approved by Director Allen Dulles in 1950.

Its objectives were to: (1) discover a means of conditioning personnel to prevent unauthorized extraction of information from them by known means, (2) investigate the possibility of control of an individual by application of special interrogation techniques, (3) investigate memory enhancement and (4) establish defensive means for prevention hostile control of agency personnel. In August 1951, Project BLUEBIRD was renamed Project ARTICHOKE, which evaluated offensive uses of interrogation techniques including hypnosis and drugs. The program ceased in 1956. Three years prior to the halt of Project ARTICHOKE, Project MKULTRA came into existence on April 13, 1953 along the lines proposed by Richard Helms, Deputy Director of Central Intelligence CDCI with the rationale of establishing a “special funding mechanism of extreme sensitivity”. The hypothetical etymology of “MK” may possibly stand for “Mind Kontrolle.” The obvious postwar translation of the German word, “Kontrolle” into English is “control”. A host of German doctors, procured from the Nazi talent pool, were an invaluable asset toward the development of MKULTRA. The correlation between the concentration camp experiments and the numerous sub-projects of MKULTRA are clearly evident. **The various avenues use to control human behavior under MKULTRA included radiation, electroshock, psychology, psychiatry, sociology, anthropology, graphology, harassment substances and paramilitary devices and materials (LSD being the most widely dispensed “material”).**

A special procedure designated MKDELTA, was established to govern the use of MKULTRA abroad. MKULTRA and MKDELTA materials were used for harassment, discrediting or disabling purposes. Of the 149 subprojects under the umbrella of MKULTRA having been identified, **Project MONARCH** officially began by the U.S Army in the early 1960’s (although implemented much earlier) appears to be the most prominent and is still classified as TOP SECRET for “National Security” reasons.

MONARCH may have been culminated from MKSEARCH subprojects, such as operation SPELLBINDER, which was set up to create “sleeper” assassins (i.e. “Manchurian Candidates”) who could be activated upon receiving a key word or phrase while in a post-hypnotic trance. Operation OFTEN, a study which attempted to harness the power of occultic forces, was possibly one of several cover programs to hid the insidious reality of Project MONARCH.

Notice the extent of the research and experimentation of mind control in the early 20<sup>th</sup> century.

### **Definition and description MONARCH**

The name MONARCH is not necessarily defined within the context of royal nobility, but rather refers to the Monarch butterfly. When a person is undergoing trauma induced by electroshock, a feeling of light-headedness is evidenced; as if one is floating or fluttering like a butterfly. There is also a symbolic representation pertaining to the transformation or metamorphosis of this beautiful insect: from a caterpillar to a cocoon (dormancy; inactivity) to a butterfly (new creation) which ***will return to its point of origin***. Such is the migratory pattern that makes this species unique. Occultic symbolism may give additional insight into the true meaning. Psyche is the word for both “soul” and “butterfly”, coming from the belief that human should become butterflies while searching for a new reincarnation. Some ancient mystical groups, such as the Gnostics, saw the butterfly as a symbol of corrupt flesh. The “Angel of Death” (remember Mengele?) in Gnostic art works was portrayed crushing the butterfly. A marionette is a puppet that is attached to strings and is controlled by the puppet master, hence MONARCH programming is also reoffered to as the “Marionette Syndrome”. “Imperial conditioning” is another term used, while some mental health therapists know it as “Conditional Stimulus-Response Sequences”.

Project MONARCH could be best described as a form of trauma-structured dissociation and occulting integration in order to compartmentalize the mind into multiple personalities within a systematic framework. During the process, a Satanic ritual, usually including Cabalistic mysticism, is performed with the purpose of attaching a particular demon or group of demons to the corresponding alter(s). Of course most people would view this as simply a means to enhance trauma within the victim negating irrational belief that demonic possession actually occurs.

This passage touches on the very core issues of when mind programming started and how governments were responsible for promoting such research. This of course, has nothing to do with governments in themselves but rather the Satanic forces that reside behind these programs. These programs were all started with one goal in mind: to create ways and means in which to control the human race and to set them up for the end time schemes of the ***New World Order***.

One cannot help at noticing the sadistic nature of Satan and his agents in using innocent people for their own means. Satan is literally using the God given abilities of the mind for his own purposes as will be seen throughout this chapter. Satan takes the ***right of thinking for oneself away*** from mind control victims and uses them for his Satanic purposes in such a way that they are completely unaware of what is happening to them.

Notice also the mention of the occult in ancient times where ways and means of torture originated in order to “enslave” the victim of abuse or torture. Also notice the involvement of the occultist elite and the Illuminati in the execution and maintenance of these mind control programs. This will be brought into context as part of the role of mind control in the NWO in the end times. Most of what is known about mind control started with the experiments done during the Second World War with Dr Mengele being a key role player for creating and “handling” mind control victims.

Some of the most horrific ways of torture were used during this time to create mind controlled slaves.

This passage also gives a lot of insight into the MONARCH mind control programs. Notice the mention of the influence of **demons** in order to gain control of the different “alter personalities”. Mind control was formerly known as “brain washing” and was done by Chinese soldiers during the Second World War. As was seen in the passage a myriad of programs were launched to study and promote psychological warfare during and after the Second World War. Many times the goal of mind control in these times was to create the perfect spy that would not leak any valuable information to the enemy when captured<sup>141</sup>.

In this way Monarch Programming is a method of mind control used by many organizations for their dark and evil purposes<sup>142</sup>. Right from the origins one can see the root of evil behind mind control: it uses methods of torture and intimidations (to create trauma), the use of potions (drugs) and the casting of spells (hypnotism), sorcery, black magic and demon possession with the ultimate outcome of the total enslavement of the victim<sup>143</sup>.

Dr Mengele (“DR GREEN”) is called the “father of Monarch Programming” as he, in the 20<sup>th</sup> century was responsible for conducting countless mind control experiments in the Nazi concentration camps especially on children and twins<sup>144</sup>. He was nicknamed the “Angel of Death” and was part of Operation Paperclip in the post-war era where he and 5000 other ranking Nazi officers were taken to the United States of America to further experiment on mind control<sup>145</sup>. So much experimentation was done to perfect the art of mind control programming that different charts exist that shows how much torture a given body weight at a given age can handle without resulting in death<sup>146</sup>!

---

<sup>141</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p.47.

<sup>142</sup> Origins and Techniques of Monarch Mind Control. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 2.

<sup>143</sup> Ibid. p. 3.

<sup>144</sup> Ibid. pp. 3-4.

<sup>145</sup> Ibid. p. 3.

<sup>146</sup> Ibid. p. 11.

The idea behind Project MKULTRA was to **create a mind controlled slave** that would range anything from an assassin to a sex slave<sup>147</sup>. In creating a “mind controlled slave” one can be a “puppet master” of someone who are trained to perform certain tasks, who do not question orders, who do not remember their actions, and if discovered, will automatically commit suicide<sup>148</sup>. This was the idea behind these mind control experiments.

In this way these mind controlled slaves can be used to be performers in the entertainment industry, prostitutes for pornographic films, high profile assassins, drug dealers and take on almost any other imaginable profile that their “handlers” require. It is like creating the perfect “human robot”. Today, signs of mind controlled slaves are everywhere:



**Figure 9.** The famous singer Rihanna wearing a “Minds control” T-shirt in the form of an upside down cross.

---

<sup>147</sup>Origins and Techniques of Monarch Mind Control. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, .p. 4.

<sup>148</sup> Ibid.p. 7.

Another more sinister purpose of creating mind controlled slaves is perhaps to create a race of human beings that are unable to think for themselves and who will conform to the New World Order without a struggle. These mind controlled slaves specifically prepared for the coming New World Order and have programmed into them certain “call back” mechanisms on which, when the “cue” is given they will respond to. It is known that:

***“The deepest and darkest alters within bloodliners are purported to be dormant until the “Anti-Christ” is revealed. These “New World Order” alters supposedly contain call back orders and instructions to train and/or initiate a large influx of people (possibly clones or “soulless ones”) thereby stimulating social control programs into the new millennium<sup>149</sup>.***

It is clear from the information presented here that these “call back alters” will play a profound role in assisting the New World Order plans to succeed.

### **7.3.2 The Basics of Mind Programming**

The programming of the mind rests on two basic processes or “principles”: Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA) and Dissociative Identity Disorder<sup>150</sup>. During systematic programming intense trauma is created through electroshock, torture, sexual abuse, mind games etc. in order to create DID thereby creating multiple personalities within an individual that can be programmed and triggered at will<sup>151</sup>. These different personalities are used to “hold” and to “hide” programming. The programming can be summarized as follows<sup>152</sup>:

---

<sup>149</sup> Brice Taylor. Thanks for the memories: The truth has set me free. The memoirs of Bob Hope’s and Henry Kissinger’s mind-controlled slave. Used as a presidential sex toy and personal computer. USA: Brice Taylor Trust, p. xi.

<sup>150</sup> Origins and Techniques of Monarch Mind Control. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 2.

<sup>151</sup> Ibid. p. 7.

<sup>152</sup> Ibid. p. 8.

**“Trauma based mind control programming can be defined as systematic torture that blocks the victim’s capacity for conscious processing (through pain, terror, drugs, illusion, sensory deprivation, sensory over-stimulation, oxygen deprivation, cold, heat, spinning, brain stimulation, and often, near death), and then employs suggestion and/or classical and operant conditioning (consistent with well-established behavioral modification principles) to implant thoughts, directives, and perceptions in the unconscious mind, often in newly-formed trauma-induced dissociated identities, that force the victim to do, feel, think, or perceive things for the purposes of the programmer. The objective is for the victim to follow directives with no conscious awareness, including execution of acts in clear violation of the victim’s moral principles, spiritual convictions, and volition.”**

Thus, mind programming is the systematic exposure to the worst kinds of torture to create DID after which the mind is programmed into different personalities as well as indoctrinated with commands, belief systems and even the “will” of the “Programmer”<sup>153</sup>. Mind control programming makes use of several methods to create a mind controlled slave some of which include the following<sup>154</sup>:

- Sexual abuse and torture
- Confinement in boxes, cages, coffins, etc., burial (often with an opening or air-tube for oxygen)
- Restraint with ropes, chains, cuffs
- Near-drowning
- Extremes of heat and cold, including submersion in ice water and burning chemicals
- Skinning (only the top layers of the skin are removed in victims intended to survive)
- Spinning

---

<sup>153</sup> Programmer will denote the person exerting the mind programming

<sup>154</sup> Origins and Techniques of Monarch Mind Control. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 9-10.



- Blinding Light
- Electric shock
- Forced ingestion of offensive body fluids and matter, such as blood, urine, feces, flesh etc.
- Hung in painful positions or upside down
- Hunger and thirst,
- Sleep deprivation
- Compression with weights and devices
- Sensory deprivation
- Drugs to create illusion, confusion and amnesia, often given by injection or intravenously
- Ingestion or intravenous toxic chemicals to create pain or illness, including chemotherapy agents
- Limbs pulled or dislocated
- Application of snakes, spiders, maggots, rats, and other animals to induce fear and disgust
- Near-death experiences, commonly asphyxiation by choking or drowning, with immediate resuscitation
- Forced to perform or witness abuse, torture and sacrifice of people and animals, usually with knives
- Forced participation in child pornography and prostitution
- Raped to become pregnant; the fetus is then aborted for ritual use, or the baby is taken for sacrifice enslavement
- Spiritual abuse to cause victim to feel possessed, harassed and controlled internally by spirits or demons
- Desecration of Judeo-Christian beliefs and forms of worship, dedication to Satan or other entities
- Abuse and illusion to convince victims that God is evil, such as convincing a child that God has raped her
- Surgery to torture, experiment, or cause the perception of physical or spiritual bombs or implants

- Harm or threats of harm to the family, friends, loved ones, pets, and other victims, to force compliance
- Use of illusion and virtual reality to confuse and create non-credible disclosure

One can clearly see the correlation between satanic rituals (eating flesh, sacrifices etc.) and mind control programming. **Each trauma and torture serves a purpose**, programming is **directed, organized and each action is designed for a specific purpose**. Once the core personality is split by these specific traumas the programmers can create an “internal world” within the mind.

Programming of the mind begins with the programming of the different alter personalities that were created by torture. Some of the survivors of mind programming who have managed to be healed from the severe dissociation have explained how during their “deprogramming” Jesus Christ have treated each one of these personalities created through torture with the utmost respect and love, the exact opposite of what was done in order to create them.

Each one of the created personalities can be programmed to develop into a full identity or personality on its own or the dissociated memories can be left as fragments in the mind. Each of the alter personalities can be programmed using different tools such as music, films (especially Disney productions) and fairy tales<sup>155</sup>. Films’ story lines are used to enhance programming like in The Wizard of Oz, the phrase “somewhere over the rainbow” is used to encourage children to dissociate so that they can effectively create a split in their minds<sup>156</sup>. By using **hypnotic suggestion** and including the child in the hypnotic process the mind is dissociated “in the right direction” by the programmers. The child is allowed to make up their own imagery, thereby creating a stronger hypnotic suggestion, and this will steer the mind of the child in the right direction. Different types of programming are used to create different kinds of personalities or alter identities.

---

<sup>155</sup> Origins and Techniques of Monarch Mind Control. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 11.

<sup>156</sup> Ibid., p. 12.

By using images, symbols, meanings and concepts the created alters can be “accessed” by using trigger words or symbols programmed into the slave’s psyche by the handler<sup>157</sup>. These words or symbols are attached to the different personalities so that when the “cue” is given – the word or symbol is used – the required personality will present itself. Shockingly, these “mind control” symbols can overtly be found in films. This is to 1) desensitize the “masses” by using subliminal and neuro-linguistic programming and to 2) deliberately insert specific triggers and keys for base programming of mind controlled children<sup>158</sup>. Mind control symbolism, like the Monarch butterfly, is used on a large scale in the entertainment media.

Different programs are used in Monarch Programming to create alters with different functions. These programming types of levels are as follows<sup>159</sup>:

#### **7.3.2.1 A-Alpha programming**

Regarded as “general” or regular programming within the base control personality; characterized by extremely pronounced memory retention, along with substantially increased physical strength and visual acuity. Alpha programming is accomplished through deliberately subdividing the victim’s personality which, in essence, causes a left brain – right brain division, allowing for a programmed union of L and R through neuron pathway stimulation.

#### **7.3.2.2 B-Beta (Sexual)**

Referred to as “sexual programming”. This programming eliminates all learned moral convictions and stimulates the primitive sexual instincts, devoid of inhibitions. “CAT” (also referred to as sex kitten) alters are created at this level.

#### **7.3.2.3 C-Chi (Return to cult)**

This is a “call-back” mechanism in which individuals who have tried to escape the mind control program or handler are “called back” into the cult or the program.

---

<sup>157</sup> Origins and Techniques of Monarch Mind Control. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 11.

<sup>158</sup> Ibid.

<sup>159</sup> Hawkins Tom. A New Approach to DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 187.

#### **7.3.2.4 D-Delta (Assassination)**

This is known as “killer” programming, originally developed for training special agents or elite soldiers (i.e. Delta Force, First Earth Battalion, Mossad, etc.) in covert operations. Optimal adrenal output and controlled aggression is evident. Subjects are devoid of fear; very systematic in carrying out their assignment. Self-destruct or suicide instructions are layered in at this level.

#### **7.3.2.5 E-Epsilon (Animal Alters)**

A human being can be programmed to believe that they are an animal and can be “trained” to present themselves the same way that an animal would.

#### **7.3.2.6 F-Omega (Internal Computers)**

A “self-destruct” form of programming, also known as “Code Green.” The corresponding behaviours include suicidal tendencies and/or self-mutilation. This program is generally activated when the victim/survivor begins therapy or interrogation and too much memory is being recovered.

#### **7.3.2.7 G-Gamma (Demonology)**

Another form of system protection is through “deception” programming, which elicits misinformation and misdirection. This level is intertwined with demonology and tends to regenerate itself at a later time if inappropriately deactivated.

#### **7.3.2.8 H-Hypnotic Inductions**

#### **7.3.2.9 I-Janus-Alex call backs (End-times)**

This type of program ensures the programming of the individual for the End Times. They are programmed to fulfil a certain function that will be required by the governing elite during these End Times.

#### **7.3.2.10 J-Theta (Psychic warfare)**

Considered to be “psychic” programming. “Bloodliners” (those coming from multi-generational Satanic families) were determined to exhibit a greater propensity for having telepathic abilities than non-bloodliners. Due to its evident limitations, however various forms of electronic mind control systems were developed and introduced, namely, biomedical human telemetry devices (brain implants), directed-energy lasers using microwaves and/or electromagnetics. It is reported these are used in conjunction with highly-advanced computers and sophisticated satellite tracking systems.

#### **7.3.2.11 K-Tinkerbelle - (Never grow up/alien)**

#### **7.3.2.12 L-Twinning - (Teams)**

In this type of programming two halves of information are implanted into two different individuals. They are meant to have all the information when they are together.

#### **7.3.2.13 M-Solemetric Military**

#### **7.3.2.14 N-Songs - (Reminders)**

#### **7.3.2.15 O-Zeta - (Snuff films)**

#### **7.3.2.16 P-Sample alter system codes**

#### **7.3.2.17 Q-Catholic programming**

#### **7.3.2.18 R-MENSA programming**

#### **7.3.2.19 S-Hand signals**

#### **7.3.2.20 T-Programming site codes (used for slave model codes etc.)**

One can deduct from the different types of mind control programs what the intentions of the mind controllers are: to **use their mind controlled slaves** as, exactly what the name indicates, slaves to perform certain tasks.

These tasks may vary and slaves can be used to assassinate someone (Delta) or to perform sexual favors (Beta), to serve as “computers” that can literally store data as was the case with Brice Taylor<sup>160</sup>, a personal mind controlled slave to Henri Kissinger. As was said, this is the perfect slave in that they do **exactly what they are told**, they are amnesiac to their own deeds and their programming is as limited as the imagination of the programmer. This is totally the opposite of what God intended for His children, He intended for them to have life, to exert their **free will** free from oppression and captivity:

***“The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.”***

***John 10:10***

***“The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.”***

***Isaiah 61:3***

Jesus Christ was sent to set these captives free from their oppression. Every single mind controlled slave is very valuable to Him.

Now that all the alter personalities have been created, the programmer have to “bring order out of the chaos” that he created. This is done by creating internal structures in the mind where all the different alter personalities can be “housed<sup>161</sup>”. Alter personalities are many times given “code words” instead of names as they are not seen as “persons” by the programmers. For instance, the code word “kitten” will be given to a Beta programmed sex slave.

---

<sup>160</sup> Brice Taylor. Thanks for the memories: The truth has set me free. The memoirs of Bob Hope’s and Henry Kissinger’s mind-controlled slave. Used as a presidential sex toy and personal computer. Brice Taylor Trust: USA.

<sup>161</sup> Hawkins Tom. A New Approach to DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p.188.

The internal structure in the mind into which these alters are placed must be understood by the child. The game, Chinese checkers, could for instance be used to “place alters” and organize them within the mind of the child. For instance:

***“Alter patterns would be placed upon the hexagram board with marbles. A marble would represent an alter. Notice that alter colors (and/or jobs) can be coded by what marble is chosen. A ruby alter can be a red marble. A blue coded alter is a blue marble. Structures which are to be superimposed upon each other in the child’s mind, are easy to superimpose. Take one pattern - of marbles off, and place the superimposed pattern of marbles over the same place. This is how several different structures can be tied together in one locality in the mind. This is one way structures can be layered in. The Hexagram checker board was called “The House of David” in one victim.”***

The function of the “internal system” is to ***protect all the information and history*** that has to do with the creation and use of the slave. These internal structures as seen by the mind controlled slaves are trees, Cabalistic Tree of Life, infinity loops, ancient symbols and letters, spider webs, mirrors, glass shattering, masks, castles, mazes, demons, butterflies, hour glasses, clocks, robots, black holes, ant pits, hallways with red doors, ocean, playground, wastelands, yellow brick road, spiders, shafts, shells, shores, stairway, tunnels, volcano, wires, keys, portals (for demons and alters like the third eye)<sup>162, 163</sup>.

During normal Monarch programming at least 1000 alters are created, not all of which are developed into full blown personalities much akin to a city of people. The “city” has certain common characteristics and each one in the city has different functions for it to work, like police, garbage collectors, city planners etc. Some “people in the city” know each other and others even hate each other. It also has a certain unity and multiplicity about it.

---

<sup>162</sup> Ibid. p.189.

<sup>163</sup> Origins and Techniques of Monarch Mind Control. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p.11.

The handlers used their slaves' creativity under torture and drugs to create all the structures and features that accompany a geological land<sup>164</sup>. One can immediately see the implications of such a large amount of alter personalities – not only just for the amount of severe trauma that they had to “go through” but also in terms of the counseling of these victims.

Important to notice that during programming many “splits” in the mind are not let to develop into complete personalities, they are left fragments that are given a “single job assignment” in this way a slave can have hundreds of alters that are only occasionally used and a few dozen that are used frequently. Each dissociative part can be molded into something and others are discarded.

Alters are placed in various places and the programmers are able to “link and unlink” and move them around until “they get something neat and tidy on a sheet of paper.” For instance<sup>165</sup>.

***“A standard Illuminati System is built like a 13 x 13 x 13 cube with an elevator shaft running up and down from the bottom to the top. The elevator is constructed as a piece of DNA and alters can ride up and down the elevator (go up or down in trance) to move when allowed. Most of the alters have no sense of time, and most of the alters do not hold the body very frequently. For various reasons most of the alters never grow up. Obviously, if they don't hold the body very much, and are dissociated from everyone else's memories, they have nothing to stimulate them to grow up. However, the Programmers must have some of the alters who can function as adults. For instance, alters who go into bars must think of themselves as adults. The alters which will hold the body in public will be hypnotically made into adults.”***

---

<sup>164</sup> Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz. The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. Chapter 4.

([http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati\\_formula\\_mind\\_control.htm](http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm))

<sup>165</sup> Ibid.



Notice that all the programming contains occultic symbolism or numbers (like 13). Programmers set up charts for each person that they program in order to keep track of all the different personalities that they have created as well as the structures into which these personalities have been placed. Each level is labeled and by the time the child is four, their whole system have been charted, with all of its strengths and weaknesses recorded. In this way the destiny of the child has been determined by the programmers<sup>166</sup>. The chart would, for instance, read what occupation the child will be made into and what function the child will fulfill in the overall Illuminati plan. Notice the preposterous arrogance of these handlers – they are to “program” the child into “what they have to become”. God says that He has planned a good and prosperous life for His children (Jeremiah 29:11), not one where the dark evil creatures of this world decides on the future of God’s precious children.

Alters have to learn to function as designed by the Programmer and alters share functions and abilities – no alter is completely separate from several common pools of intellect and temperaments that are attributable to the whole system<sup>167</sup>. In this way every alter is a real and separate person but the common traits that run through the system are also real. For instance one alter may be kind, and caring and this trait will run through the entire system.

The programmers will always build in balancing points so that alters who are for instance calm, cheerful and emotionally stable balance out all the shatteredness, pain and craziness that has deliberately been built into the system<sup>168</sup>. Jesus Christ loves, and shows respect to each and of the alter personalities<sup>169</sup> as they were all created out of severe trauma.

---

<sup>166</sup> Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz. The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. Chapter 4.

([http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati\\_formula\\_mind\\_control.htm](http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm))

<sup>167</sup> Ibid.

<sup>168</sup> Ibid.

<sup>169</sup> Neveling Adele (2013) Bloedoffer: Uit die Donker Onderwereld van Satanisme Tot ‘n Lewe van Vryheid deur die Bloed. Suid Afrika: Maranatah Christelike uitgewers. p.

During the “deprogramming” mind controlled slaves have testified of the **LOVE** of Christ that has set them free like as in the case of Adele Neveling, a former mind controlled slave who was “integrated” and deprogrammed<sup>170</sup>.

These **complex structures** that are purposefully inserted **beneath the level of consciousness** which contain directives and images that control, harm, deceive, and discourage humanity at the conscious level<sup>171</sup>. Another aspect of mind control programming yields **objects** that are perceived by the mind at a sub-conscious level as being physically implanted within the body to control, harm and deceive the individual at a conscious level. Mind controlled slaves many times believe that “bombs” were inserted into them that will explode should they “disobey” their handlers. **Fear, manipulation and extortion** form a fundamental part of controlling a mind controlled slave. They are continually kept in a state of fear and this keeps them **under the control of their handlers**.

Maintaining control of mind controlled slaves is a very important aspect of mind control. This is done in several ways. “Internal programmers” [alter personalities within the individual] will always be busy restructuring the system if other alters work against their programming. In this way a form of **internal control** is maintained. Restructuring is a continuous process, it’s not something that is done in childhood – new alters can (and are) formed in the adult years of life by internal or external programming<sup>172</sup>. When programming commences erasure codes, block codes, stop codes and “brain switch commands” have been put in place to guard the information of the internal system<sup>173</sup>. Very importantly, programming includes the insertion of “booby traps” or safeguards that prevents anyone from entering the system.

---

<sup>170</sup> Neveling Adele (2013) Bloedoffer: Uit die Donker Onderwereld van Satanisme Tot ‘n Lewe van Vryheid deur die Bloed. Suid Afrika: Maranatah Christelike uitgewers. p.

<sup>171</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans: SRA/DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p.65.

<sup>172</sup> Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz. The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. Chapter 1.

([http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati\\_formula\\_mind\\_control.htm](http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm))

<sup>173</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans: SRA/DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 102.

When accessed, say by a counselor, the system has provided for **suicide programming** that entails the automatic triggering of suicide by the mind controlled slave<sup>174</sup>. This all serves to maintain control of the mind controlled slave.

Within the system the structure and all the “codes” needs to be guarded and even the things that the slave **can think about** needs to be “guarded”. The slave is meant to be entirely “self-governing” – they are to be given orders and then to be left to carry out the order on their own in this way the slave can be blamed for whatever orders they were carrying out. Many different levels of programming are present but the mind controlled slave would not know about their internal system and it may take many years for them to “see” their internal system.

One can see from the level of control that is inserted into the mind that nothing is left to chance by the mind control programmers. The thoughts, mind, will, emotions and decisions are controlled by the programmers. There is yet another level of control that is exerted by programmers that involves the body, and more specifically, the functions of the bodies’ physiological systems.

## 8. THE CREATION OF BODY PROGRAMS

It is at the thalamus (the brain-mind connection) where researchers have found that the mind exerts an influence on the body. As a result of the state of the mind certain neurochemicals can be secreted. For instance, when under stress (mind function) the brain will convert nerve signals into “messenger molecules” that is sent into the body that affects the endocrine system to produce steroid hormones that in turn influences the nucleus of certain cells that causes them to change the expression of ones genes. In other words, the brain can literally rewrite genetics<sup>175</sup>.

---

<sup>174</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans: SRA/DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 103.

<sup>175</sup> Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz. The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. Chapter 8  
([http://www.theForbiddenKnowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati\\_formula\\_mind\\_control.htm](http://www.theForbiddenKnowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm))

In other words, in mind programming, the mind can be placed in a certain state that allows for the programmer to have direct access to the mind controlled slave's body<sup>176</sup>. In this way hypnosis can be used to regulate the body's functions such as the immune system. In addition Barbara Brown author of *New Mind, New Body* pointed out that one is able to actually control some of the body's physiological functions that were once thought to be involuntary<sup>177</sup>. This includes **using the mind to**<sup>178</sup>.

- control the pulse rate and heart beat
- control the body's temperature
- control the temperature of individual body parts or sides of the body, such as the right side of the body might get hot, and the left side of the body get ice cold. Fritz has observed this by touching the left and right sides of a victim who was burning hot on the right and ice cold on the left.
- The secretions of various enzymes and histamine production has been trained into the victims and attached to various body programs to keep the slave in line. Histamine production appears to be regulated via surgery carried out on women's breast. It appears, but hasn't been confirmed that the surgery where breast implants are placed into female Monarch slaves plays some role in histamine production & programmed control.
- allow the body to pretend that it is dead, when actually it is in an altered state similar to being comatose

This fact is not new to the world of mind programming – mind controlled slaves are able to perform these functions within their bodies. This fact is used in mind programming for slaves who are “disobedient” to their handlers<sup>179</sup>.

---

<sup>176</sup>Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz. The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. Chapter 8  
([http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati\\_formula\\_mind\\_control.htm](http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm))

<sup>177</sup> Ibid.

<sup>178</sup> Ibid.

<sup>179</sup> Ibid.

Mind programming does not only extend to the mind, but **also to the physiological functions of the body**. Here is list of the “body programs” that are programmed into slaves<sup>180</sup> in order to control their bodies through their minds:

- Auditory problems,
- a Bone disorder,
- Blood flow/circulation,
- Coma (zombie death sleep which makes victim appear dead),
- Digestive failure,
- Headaches-split brain,
- Heart failure,
- Histamine production,
- Optic problems such as blindness,
- Respiratory failure,
- Sleep deprivation,
- Sleeping program,
- Temperature change.

In this way the programmer has total control, not only over the mind of their “slave”, but also literally on a cellular level on their very vital functions through the mind/body connection.

Internal programmers (alters that are put in place to internally program and uphold the system) will be able to “trigger” body programs. Body programs are often anchored to a function like the heartbeat that would, when the program is activated, make the slave hear a heartbeat that is “refrained in their minds as the “heartbeat of Satan”.” As Springmeier notes<sup>181</sup>:

---

<sup>180</sup> Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz. The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. Chapter 8

([http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati\\_formula\\_mind\\_control.htm](http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm)).

<sup>181</sup> Ibid.

***“Again the question may be, why would they condition a slave this way? Because, if the Master can call out a hypnotic trigger and change the slave’s heart beat and blood pressure, does the reader see how “puppet-like” the slave feels? The slave’s mind and body are literally owned by the master. The slave is not even allowed to control his own body. This is what total mind control is all about.”***

As was explained not all dissociated parts of the mind are developed into complete personalities. In this way a created alter fragment (memory) that is hot or cold (created during burning or ice torture) can be attached to a program or something in the mind so that when the slave performs a specific action like moves toward the world (outside of their programming) this hot or cold feeling/memory will be programmed to come up behind the presenting alter<sup>182</sup>. This might also be used as a punishing mechanism, as when an mind controlled slave is disobedient, these “torture memories” can be called up to discipline the mind controlled slave<sup>183</sup>:

***“Other body programs appear to be connected to the memories of alters. For instance, if the Programmer wants the body to burn--he has the System pull up an alter which was tortured with fire who comes up behind the alter holding the body, and the body then reacts and feels like it is burning.”***

This concept of “Bio-feedback” yields that the brain is able to control the body<sup>184</sup> and has been known for a long time:

***“The abilities of the human brain to control the body have been seriously underrated by people...”***

---

<sup>182</sup> Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz. The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. Chapter 8  
([http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati\\_formula\\_mind\\_control.htm](http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm))

<sup>183</sup> Ibid.

<sup>184</sup> Ibid.

**Bio-feedback researchers in the 1960s were surprised to find out that if a single nerve cell's activity is placed upon a screen so that the subject can see its activity graphed, the subject will be able to mentally identify that cell apart from any other nerve fiber cell, and will be able to have voluntary control over that single cell apart from any other. Just to show how complex the body is, a single nerve fiber cell will have 600 connections.**

**This mental feat is simply mind-boggling for researchers. The Mar. 5, 1972 L.A. Times reported that patients were being taught how to alter their heart rate without drugs. This had already been happening within the Monarch Programming. This type of body control was learned by the Illuminati years ago, and has been applied to the Monarch programming to make the programming lies seem more real to the victim than the outside world."**

This is a very powerful tool in the hands of someone wishing to control another human being. They can literally program the mind to control the body on a physiological level. One can see thus, that mind control extends through controlling the mind, the soul and the body.

The final level of control is on the level of the spirit as was seen by splitting the spirit in order to attach demons into the system of the mind controlled slave. The final aspect of mind programming is the insertion of **demonic evil** into the subconscious level in order to control, harm, deceive, frighten, intimidate, discourage, depress and otherwise interfere with the life and choices of the one being controlled<sup>185</sup>. The following section will give a very brief overview of the kingdom of darkness, Satan and his entourage of demonic angels.

---

<sup>185</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans: SRA/DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p.65.

## 9. THE USE OF DEMONS IN MIND CONTROL PROGRAMMING

Sadly, the world has been left to believe that Satan and demons do not exist. What better way for Satan to camouflage himself in this web of lies so that he will not be sought out and will be left to run his sinister schemes in the background while mankind, and especially Christians, are walking around blinded by ignorance.

Satan definitely exists, and his kingdom is real! His kingdom is organized in principalities and powers that have varying levels of power depending on where they are in the hierarchy in the kingdom.

Satan is the head of his kingdom of darkness and its hierarchy is explained in the following verse:

***“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.”***

***Ephesians 6:12***

According to the Word of God there are: principalities, powers and rulers in the kingdom of darkness.

### 9.1 Principalities

Principalities are understood by the Greek word *arche* meaning “chief or ruler”<sup>186</sup>. The word *arche* also means archangel<sup>187</sup>. These demonic entities have authority over governments in the world. Their rule involves a particular nation, people or race; they rule the kingdoms of the world<sup>188</sup>.

---

<sup>186</sup>Spiritual warfare: Principalities-Powers-Rulers of Darkness-wickedness:  
([http://www.battleinchrist.com/principalities\\_powers\\_world\\_rulers\\_of\\_darkness\\_spiritual\\_wickedness\\_in\\_spiritual\\_warfare.htm](http://www.battleinchrist.com/principalities_powers_world_rulers_of_darkness_spiritual_wickedness_in_spiritual_warfare.htm))

<sup>187</sup> I Give You the Keys of The Kingdom: Satan's hierarchy.  
(<http://www.livingwaternj.com/Teaching/Satans%20Kingdom/Lesson%203.htm>)

<sup>188</sup>Spiritual warfare: Principalities-Powers-Rulers of Darkness-wickedness:  
([http://www.battleinchrist.com/principalities\\_powers\\_world\\_rulers\\_of\\_darkness\\_spiritual\\_wickedness\\_in\\_spiritual\\_warfare.htm](http://www.battleinchrist.com/principalities_powers_world_rulers_of_darkness_spiritual_wickedness_in_spiritual_warfare.htm))



Principalities are best described in the Book of Daniel where Daniel prayed and the Lord sent an angel with the answer to his prayer but the angel could only deliver the message to Daniel twenty one days later as the angel was held up by the principality of the air, the Prince of Persia. According to the Book of Daniel:

***“Then said he unto me, Fear not, Daniel: for from the first day that thou didst set thine heart to understand, and to chasten thyself before thy God, thy words were heard, and I am come for thy words. But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me one and twenty days: but, lo, Michael, one of the chief princes, came to help me; and I remained there with the kings of Persia.”***

***Daniel 10:12-13***

The head of all the principalities is Satan and second in command is Beelzebub<sup>189</sup>, the chief Lieutenant of Lucifer (the name means “Lord of the flies”) which in turn gives orders to the four Princes: the princes of the North (Belial meaning “worthlessness<sup>190</sup>”), East (Abbadon/Appolion<sup>191</sup>), West (Leviathan<sup>192</sup>) and South (Set, the “Beast<sup>193</sup>”).

## **9.2 Powers and Rulers**

Powers and rulers are described by the word “exousia” which means derived or conferred authority, the warrant or right to do something, or delegate influences of control<sup>194</sup>. Rulers<sup>195</sup> of darkness are described by the word “Kosmokrators” or “world rulers”.

---

<sup>189</sup> According to 2 Kings 1:2-3, 6, 16; Mark 3:22; Luke 11:15, 18-19; Matthew 10:25

<sup>190</sup> Malan Christina Dr (2010) The perversion of mankind through sexual brokenness and deviation with special reference to homosexuality, destroying God’s purpose for Godly bloodlines. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p.289.

<sup>191</sup> Ibid. p. 299.

<sup>192</sup> Ibid. p. 295.

<sup>193</sup> Ibid. p. 292.

<sup>194</sup> Spiritual warfare: Principalities-Powers-Rulers of Darkness-wickedness:

([http://www.battleinchrist.com/principalities\\_powers\\_world\\_rulers\\_of\\_darkness\\_spiritual\\_wickedness\\_in\\_spiritual\\_warfare.htm](http://www.battleinchrist.com/principalities_powers_world_rulers_of_darkness_spiritual_wickedness_in_spiritual_warfare.htm))

<sup>195</sup> Spiritual warfare: Principalities-Powers-Rulers of Darkness-wickedness:

(<http://www.livingwaternj.com/Teaching/Satans%20Kingdom/Lesson%203.htm>)

### 9.3 Demons

Reference to demons are found throughout Scripture (Mark 3:15, Matthew 12:43, 1 Timothy 4:1, Acts 16:17, Mark 1:23, Ephesians 2:2, 2 Timothy 1:7, Luke 13:12, Matthew 12:22, 1 Chronicles 22:22-23). Demons are evil spirits that roam the earth, they hate God and they hate mankind. Their aim is the same as that of their master, Satan, to steal, kill and destroy (John 10:10).

Anyone of these types of demonic entities could be attached to the demonic alters or to the “legal right” upon the life of a mind controlled slave. They are all evil spirits that hate mankind and are set out to destroy the human race.

### 9.4 The Issue of Legal Right

No demon or principality can “access” or influence a human being without the “legal right” to do so. Legal rights give the enemy right of way into a person’s life and these rights have been established by God<sup>196</sup>. Legal rights can be curses, abominations in a person or a home<sup>197</sup>, sins like unforgiveness<sup>198</sup>, soul ties<sup>199</sup>, names<sup>200</sup>, involvement in the cult<sup>201</sup>, strange religions<sup>202</sup>, spirit guides<sup>203</sup>, vows and dedications<sup>204</sup>, psychic heredity<sup>205</sup>, Roman Catholicism<sup>206</sup>, drugs<sup>207</sup>, Holistic healing<sup>208</sup>, sexual sins<sup>209</sup> and hexes (spells)<sup>210</sup>.

---

<sup>196</sup> Ing Richard (1996) *Spiritual warfare*. USA: Whitaker House, p. 75.

<sup>197</sup> Ibid. p.82.

<sup>198</sup> Ibid.p. 90.

<sup>199</sup> Ibid.p.94.

<sup>200</sup> Ibid.p. 97.

<sup>201</sup> Ibid.p.98.

<sup>202</sup> Ibid.p.99.

<sup>203</sup> Ibid.p.101.

<sup>204</sup> Ibid.p.102.

<sup>205</sup> Ibid.

<sup>206</sup> Ibid. p.103.

<sup>207</sup> Ibid. p.105.

<sup>208</sup> Ibid. p.107.

<sup>209</sup> Ibid. p.108.

<sup>210</sup> Ibid. p.115.

One of the most important legal rights used in mind programming is the one of the curse of the forefathers as found in Exodus 20:5:

***“Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me;”***

***Exodus 20:5***

This means that whenever idolatry (worshipping anything other than God is prevalent) this curse will be transferred to the generations to come. Not only is the sin transferred to subsequent generations but also the demonization associated with the sin<sup>211</sup>. ***Generational spirits*** are transferred from one generation to the next.

In mind control the generations preceding a mind control victim are mostly involved in Kabalistic, Freemasonry and the Illuminati<sup>212</sup> – all of which opens the door to legal right for demons to access the individual.

An “image” is something other than the One True God. Images are a type of ***lie*** that places one into bondage<sup>213</sup>. This is the reason for Satan and programmers using so much imagery in mind control – they are all lies that places the mind control slave in ***further bondage***.

In Mind Control programming, the monarch butterfly was chosen mainly because of its ***ability to pass “knowledge” to its subsequent generations***. In the same way when dealing with mind control certain ancestral spirits are used that have been in families for generations. “Gamma programing” refers to the secret layer in of demons within the mind control system<sup>214</sup>.

---

<sup>211</sup> Riggs Doug (2012). Articles and Information. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, 43.

<sup>212</sup> Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz. The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. Chapter 10  
([http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati\\_formula\\_mind\\_control.htm](http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm))

<sup>213</sup> Ibid

<sup>214</sup> Ibid.

Ceremonies to demonize the mind controlled slave occur even before they are born<sup>215</sup>. Demons are incorporated into the “system” of mind controlled slaves and deliverance through the blood of Jesus Christ is the **only way** that these mind controlled slaves can obtain freedom from their **programmed demonic oppression**.

In the demonic side of programming, the Hegelian dialectic is many times used in order to incorporate demons into the system. Trauma is induced, and the answer to the chaos is demons presenting the alter some kind of relief in turn for access to themselves. Alters would sell their souls for false “safety” offered by demons in order for them to gain entry into the system.

Demonization not only involves demons but the total indoctrination of the victim to turn away from God and to hate their Creator! By following **certain spiritual principles** they are able to control the spiritual side of a human being.

The first spiritual principle that is applied is that if one can get someone to be mad at God one is able to get them to commit any sin. For this reason slaves are made to believe that God hates them and have rejected them. God is made out to be cruel and judgmental and verses from the Bible are quoted to prove this to the mind controlled slave. They are told that He wants to punish them for all that they have done – mind controlled slaves are many times involved in killing other children during their programming which makes them vulnerable to this extortion. In this way mind controlled slaves are turned away from God at a very early age.

One can see that the attack on the spirit is not only through the shattering and demon possession thereof but also through the indoctrination of deceptions that will prevent these victims to obtain their **only hope of freedom, a relationship with Jesus Christ**.

---

<sup>215</sup> Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz. The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. Chapter 10  
([http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati\\_formula\\_mind\\_control.htm](http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm))

The next spiritual principles are used to isolate “the system” of the mind controlled slave from God: they are broken down to a level of “animal like” behavior – they are dehumanized so that they are incapable of seeing themselves as beings capable of spiritual endurance<sup>216</sup>.

The self-image is broken down and these slaves are not allowed to think of themselves as being made in the Image of Christ – they are not allowed to accept themselves that will result in them resisting the will of God<sup>217</sup>. The wrong attitudes are built into the slave so that they always resist the will of God as a result of these deceptions planted into the mind.

The love of God is used against a person in mind control. At the age of two, mind controlled slaves are made to accept the love of God, only so that the programmers could subsequently create a polar opposite, satanic alter that are wounded and rejected by them.

Rejection is a very powerful tool in the hands of Satan, it works like a sinus wave: if rejected one would try to overcompensate to perform or one would retaliate against the rejection. Both of these extremes are “tools of bondage” in that when rejection occurs a person would either retaliate or try harder to perform because the mind will try to balance out the inconsistency. This will create a bondage loop in which one will either be angry or the other extreme – over perform<sup>218</sup>. God on the other hand says that one does not have to earn His love and He demonstrated this love on the cross of Jesus Christ.

---

<sup>216</sup> Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz. The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. Chapter 10  
([http://www.theForbiddenKnowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati\\_formula\\_mind\\_control.htm](http://www.theForbiddenKnowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm))

<sup>217</sup> Ibid

<sup>218</sup> Ibid.

It is upon this principle that the Kabalistic Tree of Life operates: the slave is repeatedly rejected and they are not allowed to get angry at the programmer – the more they are rejected, the more they will try to perform, the more the anger (the other side of the rejection “sinus” wave) will build up. The anger (that is not allowed against the programmer) is then released against themselves or against God<sup>219</sup>.

## 10. GROUPS WHO ARE ENFORCING MIND CONTROL

Three groups are distinguished that are involved in practicing mind control: generational fertility rights, government military agenda, generational Satanism<sup>220</sup>.

## 11. THE REASON FOR MONARCH PROGRAMMING

***“The research and funds invested in project Monarch do not however only apply to mind control slaves. Many of the programming techniques perfected in these experiments are applied on a mass scale through mass media. Mainstream news, movies, music video’s, advertisements and television shows are conceived using the most advanced data on human behavior ever compiled. A lot of this comes from Monarch programming.”***

The “art” of mind control is not a new concept to mankind. It has, however been extensively studied throughout the 20<sup>th</sup> century. Progress in mind control has been made to such an extent that subliminal mind control can be done in order to cause an individual to perform actions without them even being sure why they are doing it.

---

<sup>219</sup> Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz. The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. Chapter 1.

([http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati\\_formula\\_mind\\_control.htm](http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm))

<sup>220</sup> Ibid.

All of the mind control knowledge that has been obtained through these years of research are used in gaining control over the masses by a force so dark and dangerous working from behind the scenes in order to establish their age old agenda of establishing a One World Order in which they will have total control over the human race. The following section summarizes what the evil agenda is behind gaining control over the minds of men.

### 11.1 The Spirit behind mind control

As was mentioned in the passage by Ron Patton, mind control is part of a much greater scheme in order to gain control over the human race in order to make them **slaves in the NWO**. The idea behind the NWO is to take control of the World. This idea will be discussed in a successive chapter.

The governing elite behind the NWO agenda need to push their agenda for total world domination. They are pushing their agenda to adopt the “process of Enlightenment/Illumination” around the world<sup>221</sup>. This process involves mind control on a global scale and rests on the indoctrination of the masses into a belief system where everyone is made to believe that they are “gods” themselves. Mind control through SRA is a much quicker way of getting “compliance” with their NWO system<sup>222</sup> as the mind controlled slaves have no will or choice of their own.

## 12. SOLUTION

The **only way** for a mind controlled slave to gain freedom from mind control is by the **Blood of Jesus Christ**. By no other means can the demons be expelled or “cast out” from their intricate internal systems. They are to be led to accept Jesus Christ as their Lord and Saviour so that they can be removed from the kingdom of darkness and be transferred into the kingdom of light. In this way the Holy Spirit will dwell inside of them and guide and lead the process of reintegration to their freedom.

---

<sup>221</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans: SRA/DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 57.

<sup>222</sup> Ibid. p. 58.

Psychology, based on human reason, cannot be offered as a solution to these severely abused DID victims and it is only through cooperation and the Power of the Holy Spirit that these victims would ever obtain freedom from their condition. Riggs explains that the deliverance of an individual with this kind of programming cannot be delivered all at once and it implies a process<sup>223</sup>:

***“This kind of DID and demonization is so intertwined and so convoluted that the person would be devastated if they were delivered all at once. No sense of self left, like an assault in itself. Just as the Israelites’ had to proceed step by step to take the land, because otherwise the wild animals would have been too much for them, so do we see restoration from SRA/DID”.***

As can be seen MONARCH programming is a complicated issue and involves a lot of carefully planned systems within the mind controlled slave to prevent anyone from entering the system in order for deliverance and healing to take place. However, ***nothing is impossible with God*** (Luke 1:37) and He is the Ultimate Healer of people who have been shattered with trauma in creating DID.

The prognosis of people living with DID is good given that they are given the right support and treatment<sup>224</sup>. They can once again become a whole functioning individual. Because the cause of DID is not biological, but rather occurs as a result of abuse in the early years of life, the treatment of DID is generally effective and literature have indicated that DID has an 80-90% cure rate if the individual stays in therapy<sup>225</sup>. God did not intend for mankind to be ruled by fellow man or by any kind of demonic entity. The shattered spirits of these individuals needs to be reintegrated by and through the working of the Holy Spirit and the Blood of Jesus Christ so that they too can experience the true freedom that Jesus died for.

---

<sup>223</sup> Riggs Doug (2012). Articles and Information. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 13.

<sup>224</sup> Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans: DID/SRA. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 23.

<sup>225</sup> Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries, p. 16.



### 13. CONCLUSION

Satan, the adversary, has had thousands of years to study mankind – their behaviours, their tendencies and their weaknesses. He has had thousands of years to figure out exactly how the mind works. He has also studied how to manipulate and control the human mind up to a degree that they would have no chance in having a will of their own. This is the premise of this chapter, the methods for obtaining and instilling control over the human mind that mankind is literally a puppet in the hands of whoever is controlling them.

Some of the cruellest, most revolting methods of torture known to mankind are used to obtain a **deep level of control** over mankind. This is akin to the character of Satan who is out to kill and destroy mankind made in the Image of God. Mind control does not only provide control over the mind of an individual but also over their bodies. Through the manipulation of memory the body can be used as a tool against the mind controlled slave for punishment. The bodies physiological processes are controlled up to a micro level making it impossible and even dangerous for a mind controlled slave to disobey their handlers. This speaks of total submission to whoever is handling the individual at any given moment.

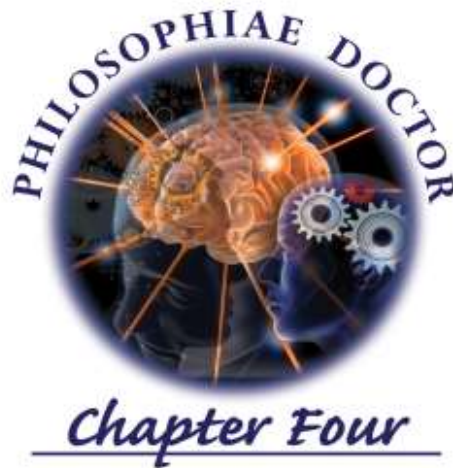
This is in total contrast to what God intended for mankind. He intended for them to be free from oppression, to be set free from captivity and to **rule and to reign upon the earth.**

Through mind control, demonic powers can gain legal access into the minds of these mind controlled slaves and can torture them throughout their life time. Their lives are destroyed and the destruction of their minds is so great that only the Holy Spirit can free them from their deep bondage in which the enemy has total control over them.

Satan has ensured that in the deep programming of the mind there was made room for his End Time schemes in the minds of his controlled victims.

Through “call-back” alter personalities these mind controlled slaves has been pre-programmed for the End Times when Satan’s grand scheme of a One World Order will be played out upon the earth. They will be assigned to perform certain tasks during the End Times in order to help establish and control the final world order that is to be established upon the earth.

-----oOo-----



## *End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World Order by Controlling the Masses Through Mind Control*

---

### 1. INTRODUCTION

***“Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ.”***

***1 Peter 1:13***

The Bible, the Word of God, instructs mankind to “gird up the loins” of their minds. By girding up the mind, mankind is to ensure that they are to tighten the reign of control in what is allowed in the mind<sup>1</sup>. The “loins” is the part of man where the reproductive organs resides, the part that is capable of “creating” new life in the same way the brain is creative and capable of creating new ideas or thoughts<sup>2</sup>.

---

<sup>1</sup> Controlling your mind September 2010. (<http://www.spiritalive.org/newsletter.php?view=12>)

<sup>2</sup> Ibid.

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

What goes on in the mind is very important to God and one will be held responsible for ones thoughts. The mind is the most powerful organ in controlling the life of a human being (Proverbs 23:7). Whatever a man thinks on, or dwells on, will become his life.

This is an important point to consider as it translates to, whatever resides in ones' own personal thought life will be worked out to ones external life. If thoughts are sinful, like was seen in the case of addictive sins such as pornography, these sins will be prevalent in ones' life.

The Bible therefore gives clear instruction as to what should be thought on:

***“Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things.”***

***Philippians 4:8***

The Bible further instructs:

***“And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.”***

***Romans 12:2***

Notice that when one renews ones mind to the truth of God's Word that one will know what is good, acceptable and within the will of God. This leads to life and godliness as the Word of God will lead to a revelation and more knowledge of Jesus Christ:

***“According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust. And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity.***

***For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ."***

***2 Peter 1:3-8***

By equipping ones mind with knowledge of God's Word by meditating or ***thinking about His Word*** one can be sure to be safeguarded from all evil and false doctrines by knowing the truth of God's Word. The Bible instructs mankind not to walk with the ungodly or to take their council:

***"Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in his law doth he meditate day and night. And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper.***

***Psalms 1:1-3***

One who meditates on the Word of God will be like a tree planted by rivers, flourishing and bringing forth good fruit (of godliness and life). Jesus Christ, the Son of God who was sent to the earth to die for the sins of mankind is the Living Word of God:

***In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.***

***John 1:1-3***

Jesus Christ is the Word of God Personified; therefore if one has the Word of God in ones mind and are directed by it one will experience ***Life*** as a result of Jesus Christ:

***Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.***

***John 14:6***

What a wonderful truth! To have life by letting the Word of God guard ones heart and mind in Jesus Christ. If ones' mind and life is ruled by the Word of God, one is mindful to keep the commandments that God gives in His Word, and thereby lead a life that leads to life and goodness.

One of the reasons God warns on protecting, renewing and guarding the mind with the Word of God is because of the brutal onslaught of the enemy on the mind of believers and non-believers. The enemy has put in place a myriad of snares and mechanisms to deceive, kill and destroy mankind and cheat them not only out of a life of goodness, joy and peace but also to rip from them the eternal life that was promised and is available to them through the finished work of Jesus Christ on the Cross.

The enemy uses weapons like **deception and temptation** to lure mankind out of the protection of God Almighty and into bondage and captivity. The **mind** is the enemy's main target as he knows that if he can control the mind he can control the person. A myriad of deceptions, has been set in place like "low hanging fruit" for the children of God to take hold of and to fall into his trap. His strategy has not changed since the Garden of Eden and he is still using the **same lies** and same temptations to make a man believe that they can be **gods themselves** that he used in the Garden of Eden to deceive Eve (Genesis 3). As a result of her believing his lie that she as a created human being could become God herself, she brought the Fall upon mankind – sin entered their hearts and the world and as a result, their spirits died.

The deception, this time, is of such that only those truly devoted to God and His Word will be able to discern his crafty ways. Mankind has been prepared to accept not only the False Church but also the Anti-Christ right in their midst.

The preparation of "the masses" was a slow transition that took centuries to plan. But at last the sinister schemes of the enemy and his entourage are coming together like the final pieces of a large puzzle that are falling into place.

This chapter will deem to explore the End Time Strategy of Satan and his evil hordes as it pertains to the attack on the minds of human kind. The end goal of all of the deceptions of Satan is to finally gain control over the human race and to get them to worship him.

Satan knows that he has been defeated at the foot of the cross of Jesus Christ:

***“And having spoiled principalities and powers, he [Jesus Christ] made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.”***

***Colossians 2:15***

His only fate now is to take as many of God's children with him to hell in an attempt to “get back at God” for triumphing over him and throwing him out of heaven as a result of his own sin. His devilish endeavour incorporates all means and methods to deceive, kill and destroy mankind with the most cunning plots ever seen on the face of the earth. By deceiving mankind he is able to turn them away from God and thereby succeeding in his overall goal. Satan's main premise is to ***gain control over*** the sons of man in order to be worshipped. If he is worshipped, God is not, which by implication means that he is taking whoever he controls with him to hell.

Gaining control in order to influence the free will of mankind to choose God is what Satan is trying to achieve. He is trying to establish a New World Order in which he will be worshipped as “god” by a ***mind controlled and compliant human race***.

## **2. HITLER: THE DOMINATION OF A NATION THROUGH ONE MAN**

In order to understand the End Time schemes of Satan as it pertains to ***mind control of all of the world's inhabitants*** and the plans that he intends to invoke in order for his New World Order (NWO) to reign upon the earth, one needs to understand how such a feat can be achieved.

A perfect example is none other than the one who were able to achieve this goal on a nationwide scale during the First and Second World War, Adolf Hitler. He was able to establish his reign as well as to enforce all of his own “personal beliefs” upon a nation resulting in the deaths of millions of innocent Jews.

His strategy for achieving total control over a nation demands a closer look.

## 2.1 The science of mind controlling a nation

In a masterful plan executed over time to its perfection Hitler managed to conquer a nation with his own evil ideas. He's tactics flooded every front of the society, from schools to politics, to military bases and into his elite SS forces. He managed to indoctrinate all of them to achieve his sinister goals.

These goals were, for the most part, driven by more sinister hand, but as will be explained, the ideas and doctrines that were proposed were sometimes as a result of his own **mental models** that he projected onto others!

One of the concepts that originated from psychology, **projection**, is an unconscious process in which one projects an intention onto another without realizing that one has the same intention oneself. This is interestingly enough also a verse found in the Bible:

***“Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest doest the same things.”***

***Romans 2:1***

It can be explained as follows: Hitler believed that he contracted syphilis from a Jewish prostitute and feared that he would not be able to lead a normal life. It was a belief by the “lay man” of that time that syphilis was a blood disease and as blood was seen to “rule life” (it controlled the life functions and heredity, so they believed), contracting syphilis would indicate that ones’ blood was poisoned<sup>3</sup>.

After medical tests confirmed that Hitler did not have syphilis – he still believed that his blood was poisoned.

---

<sup>3</sup> Victor George (2000) Hitler: The Pathology of Evil. USA: Potomac Books. p. 123.



He was not satisfied and his belief about his “tainted” blood then pushed the blame onto his genetics in that he believed that he obtained his poisoned blood from his father<sup>4</sup> and thereby he could not be free of it.

He was delusional and this delusion is the basis for his reign in Germany.

He “projected” his self-perceptions about his poisonous blood onto the Jews by seeing **them** as infected with “poison in their blood<sup>5</sup>.” This was of course only a projection of what he saw in himself, whether it was true or not. Projection is way of “ridding oneself” of undesirable traits like saying “It is not I who is evil, it’s they<sup>6</sup>”.

Projection is what made Hitler project his own lying, evil and hostile nature upon the Jews (something that he saw in himself) for which he then murdered them<sup>7</sup>. He even projected his fetish with himself of being physically unclean onto them portraying **them** as “dirty and smelly”. He projected his disgust of his own “poisoned blood” onto the Jewish nation as a result of genetic heritage and blamed this as “the root of all evil” in them.

Almost everything that Hitler accused the Jews of being inferior of was also a self-projection of what he saw in himself. We will now investigate how this self-projection could be used to influence a nation into murdering innocent people.

A short case study will be presented on how Adolf Hitler was able to **mind control** a whole nation to believe that they, the Germans, were more superior to the Jews and that the Jews were actually their enemies with poisonous blood that resulted in millions of them being murdered.

---

<sup>4</sup> Victor George (2000) Hitler: The Pathology of Evil. USA: Potomac Books. p. 123..

<sup>5</sup> Ibid.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid. p. 126.

It happened the following way: right from the beginning of his reign, Hitler's public speeches contained the same message: all of the German nations' troubles were caused by oppression of their enemies whose purpose was to annihilate Germany<sup>8</sup> and the only way to fight them and to protect Germany was to annihilate them in return. In other words by propagating this message, Germans were made to believe that war was the only answer to protect Germany from their enemies. Annihilating them meant war. So war was propagated as something to be sought after<sup>9</sup>:

***“War was not only a factor of extermination but a principle of regeneration. It alone enables the human soul to reveal all its riches and all its force. Biology will stamp the next war as an extermination fight of entire nations”***

So by making the German nation believe that their enemies needs to be annihilated in order to save themselves and by propagating war one can see from this statement how war was made out to be something vital and necessary in the eyes of the Germans.

The statements that Hitler used throughout his “campaign” to the German nation were akin to what Satan used in the Garden of Eden when deceiving Eve with only half of the truth<sup>10</sup>.

The Bible states that Satan is the Father of lies<sup>11</sup> and this characteristic can be seen throughout this case study as lies and deception were used by Hitler to attain his goals.

In order to invoke the “spirit of war” upon the German nation he did the following: Hitler wore his military uniform in many settings to invoke an image of a war leader amongst the nation and national leaders.

---

<sup>8</sup> Victor George (2000) Hitler: The Pathology of Evil. USA: Potomac Books. p. 107.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid.

<sup>10</sup> According to Genesis 3:1-7

<sup>11</sup> John 8:44

Furthermore he declared the war to come as something that every German would be “judged for” in the history of mankind and that whoever failed to defend their country and be part of the war would forfeit their citizenship<sup>12</sup>. One can see that the German’s did not have much of a choice to participate in the war, they had to, in order not to lose their citizenship. This is one of the first principles of indoctrinating a nation – they must not have free will to decide if they want to accept the new doctrines being propagated.

He further pushed the war agenda into making it part of the everyday lives by making military activities like soldierly organization, uniforms, martial music, marching, drills, and the frequent site of thousands of impressive military formations more visible – according to a German citizen<sup>13</sup>, this made an impression on the hearts of the German nation.

He also indoctrinated the German citizens by bringing military terms and gestures like saluting along with “*Heil Hitler*” into everyday life<sup>14</sup>. It would become the greeting term whereby the “everyday man” would greet and talk to each other.

Moreover, every other aspect in the society were “militarized” in which the government substituted non-military phrases for military ones where ordinary things now all had a “military ring” to it: like job procurement was called “labour battle”, a worker was called “a soldier of labour” and production was called the “production battle”. By doing this he was clearly impressing and reinforcing “war” upon each and every German.

One can see the “war” theme being made such a big part of the everyday life of the citizens of Germany. Also, one can see how constant exposure accompanied by the repetition of the “war theme” was drilled into the **subconscious minds** of the German nation.

---

<sup>12</sup> Victor George (2000) *Hitler: The Pathology of Evil*. USA: Potomac Books. p. 107.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid.

<sup>14</sup> Ibid.

Furthermore, becoming a soldier in war was made out to be something heroic whereas not going to war was even dangerous as these “outliers” (those who are not willing to participate in war) could even place their lives in danger for not going to war. So something that should be voluntary again becomes compulsory and the lie of how “heroic” it is to go and kill many others are told to ensure that young men will pursue this “heroic adventure”.

The indoctrination worked: children were even **aspiring** to become part of Hitler’s army (in his feat to world domination) – something they strived for when growing up<sup>15</sup>.

The military principle was pushed into the Nazi Party by introducing the “Führer principle” wherein only Hitler could make decisions and whatever he said **were to be blindly obeyed**. He also introduced the “Führer Order” which meant that the order, no matter who was giving it or what it was, was an order that directly came from Hitler and this type of order **had to be** obeyed. Individual judgement and conscience did not matter. By doing this, he set himself up as the only authority over the German nation, even above the consciousness and moral values of the individuals whom were to follow the orders.

German children were **preparing for killing** by introducing simulated warfare in schools: sports were invested with military weapons such that the javelin and discus were replaced with a hand grenade; other military themes such as camouflage, rifle training and war games were part of the school curriculum (even for girls).

Slogans like “we were born to die for Germany<sup>16</sup>” and “we were born to die” were introduced in every entrance in their camps and military camps thus indoctrinating them to be prepared to die for Germany in the war.

---

<sup>15</sup> Victor George (2000) Hitler: The Pathology of Evil. USA: Potomac Books. p. 109.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid.

Fourteen year old boys were told<sup>17</sup>:

***“You may have to die for Hitler before you are twenty. But is this not a wonderful privilege? What greater and more glorious mission can a German boy have that to die for the saviour of Germany? And now raise your hands and repeat after me the oath that will indeed make you Hitler’s soldiers, ready to lay down your lives for him.”***

The children were thus indoctrinated from a very young age to believe the lies of the saviour of the German nation, Hitler himself. They used double messages like: “Triumphant we will beat the French, and die brave heroes”. Hitler was, by instilling these ideas into the minds of young children preparing an army of soldiers that would readily go to war and willingly lay down their lives for him, their “saviour” who was trying to “save” Germany from their enemies!

One can clearly see the overt mind control and indoctrinations of ideas of Hitler to train these young children up to be soldiers for his own purposes.

War games included real suffering of children in order to get them “used to suffering<sup>18</sup>”:

***“...one of the prisoners [children in the “war game”]...was bought into headquarters...His hands were tied behind him so firmly that the wrists were swollen. He was gagged with strips of adhesive. His eyes were pasted shut. He was kicked along and called names.”***

One can see that even ***at this young age*** conditioning of the cruellest kind took place amongst these young boys. They were literally made accustomed to the “war scene” on the school playground in the cruellest ways in “preparation for war”.

---

<sup>17</sup> Victor George (2000) Hitler: The Pathology of Evil. USA: Potomac Books. p.110.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid. p. 109.

Further enforcing his **lies and opinions** into the **minds of Germans**, the school curriculum contained teachings about the “Aryan race” that were a morally superior race. This is the race that Hitler was trying to create with all of his “scientific experiments”, they would be superior to “normal human beings”. From the early years of life these young Germans were indoctrinated to believe that this Aryan race, because of their superiority, could fulfil their desires, even if it meant violating moral and legal boundaries, in fact, this was considered their “right and duty” in fulfilling their destiny.

The German children were indoctrinated to believe that **because of their superiority** they were **required to do what was unjust by normal standards**. What an incredible lie! Deceiving little children and educating them that they are better than other human beings and therefore they are entitled to do even the cruellest things as part of their “duty” in “being superior”.

One can see Satan’s sin, **pride**, being indoctrinated into young minds at a complete opposite end of what Jesus Christ taught about humility with His life. This was the basis on which the cruel things could be done to the Jews by the German soldiers when they grew up.

They were also taught that they were to be unscrupulous in performing their duties as it is in “national interest” – in other words the more brutal and ruthless they were better. So good is bad and bad is good. They were also made to be indifferent to the suffering that they imposed – Hitler achieved this by imposing **his hatred** upon the soldiers so that when they were brutally torturing or murdering their Jewish victims they were doing it out of “their hatred” against the nation. Out of “their hatred” they could then inflict the cruellest behaviour upon the Jews. Once again one can see the power of the mind being indoctrinated to believe a lie and then act upon it.

The SS endured the most “extensive training” in that in order to make them indifferent to the suffering they were imposing.

They were told to kill babies in front of their mothers without showing emotion or hesitating, if they did, they were called unmanly or weak in front of the enemy<sup>19</sup>. They were forced to witness prisoners being tortured and killed and were indoctrinated to be indifferent to these actions.

This was “justified” by regarding the Jews as an inferior race having no worth or value – they were made out to be more inferior than animals only resembling humans. This of course, stems from a lie based on Hitler’s hatred for the Jewish nation. No human being can be lowered to the level of an animal, as they are all God’s handiwork, precious in His eyes. The same pamphlet advocating these lies about the Jewish nation also referred to the Germans as “**the superior race, gods that overcame their “humanness”**.” Again Satan’s lie of mankind becoming god can be seen indoctrinated into the minds of the German nation.

The candidates of the *Death Head Division* who were to work in the concentration camps were especially selected for their task. Brutality and ruthlessness awarded them medals and praise by the Fuhrer. They were told to never speak of their deeds publically and Himmler also told them<sup>20</sup>:

**“Do not lose your courage, for future generations will thank you for overcoming your Christian weakness and finishing this good but dreadful work.”**

Many of these “elite men” as they were called were disowned by their parents for rejecting their faith and many of them later, after being part of the concentration camp killings, requested to rather fight on the fronts or were willing to die there in order to escape what they were a part of. One can see as part of the propaganda one were to let go of ones faith in God – thereby not only giving up the moral teachings of the Word of God but also giving up ones rightful place in heaven by rejecting Jesus Christ as ones’ Personal Lord and Saviour.

---

<sup>19</sup> Victor George (2000) Hitler: The Pathology of Evil. USA: Potomac Books. p. 110-111.

<sup>20</sup> Ibid. p.112.

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

The Bible says:

***“Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!”***

***Isaiah 5:20***

During these indoctrinations evil was made to be good, they were praised for killing and praised even more if the killing was brutal. In a similar vein, euphemisms were used for doing “criminal” acts and these were used in government as standard practise, for instance denying Jewish children education was called “Law Against Overcrowding German Schools” or invading and occupying a country was called “protecting” it or ensuring its “neutrality”, death camps were called “health resorts” or “charitable foundations for institutional care<sup>21</sup>”. One can see the deception and cunning lies of Hitler being portrayed as something wonderful and kind to human beings.

Hitler raised himself to the state of a “god” by creating a myth that he was the incarnation of the race’s historic mission from which his supernatural powers came and the destiny and will of the Germans<sup>22</sup> (which he imposed onto them) were in his hands as only he knew what this destiny was. He said that the “will” of the race was something that he knew instinctively in a way that surpassed all ethical, religious and legal codes and called this instinct of his “the sound judgement of the German people” and made it the governing principle of the Third Reich. How preposterous of one man making setting himself above a nation, deciding for “them” and then enforcing these ideas on them as their own.

The people were not permitted to express their judgement. Hitler said that the Nazi party spoke for the people while he controlled what the Party said; in essence what Hitler said is what the people said.

---

<sup>21</sup> Victor George (2000) Hitler: The Pathology of Evil. USA: Potomac Books. p.114.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid. p. 115.



In the same way the law system was overwritten by the slogan “the law and the will of the Fuhrer are one<sup>23</sup>” and he declared himself the highest judge of the nation with the right to have whomever he chose, killed or protected. The law Academy was given the slogan “love for the Further has become a legal concept<sup>24</sup>”. The law system was overthrown by the statement (and enforcement thereof) “Right is what serves the German people<sup>25</sup>.”

In this way it did not matter what the situation was, or who was really guilty, the German people or the “will of Hitler” would always win. One can see in the way that the juridical system was overthrown by Hitler’s personal doctrines how he set himself up as the highest authority above the law and everyone else. Also the doctrines were all accepted and made the law even though they were bizarre. But because of fear for the Fuhrer and all the mind control that he already had in place in the nation, this was not questioned.

The lawyers and judges of the time were not always sure what the “will of Fuhrer” would be, as some crimes were punished by death while others much more offensive literally got away with murder.

In the juridical system the people of Germany were divided into classes of higher and lower rank so that two people could commit the same crime but the one from the higher ranking (say middle class) would walk away free while the lower class citizen would get the death penalty.

Hitler’s reign and control were enforced on every level of society. New subordinates, like administrators, were made to be part of harming and killing Jews to “harden” them to destruction but also to have a future hold on their lives as being part of a crime so that they were subjected to the protection of Hitler without which they would be persecuted<sup>26</sup>. .

---

<sup>23</sup> Victor George (2000) Hitler: The Pathology of Evil. USA: Potomac Books. p. 115

<sup>24</sup> Ibid. p. 116.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid. p. 117.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid.. p. 115.

This kept them under his control much in the same way that mind controlled victims are made to be part of crimes and are then held liable for it and kept in control by being blackmailed for “their” crime.

Hitler used a perversion of a “Darwin doctrine” as basis for his actions in that he postulated that in the struggle for a species to survive (“survival of the fittest<sup>27</sup>”), one species had to make constant war on the other until one of them was extinct. Firstly, this is not what the Darwinism principle postulates: when one species encounters another “hostile species” in nature they will only kill the one enemy that they came in contact with, they would not kill off the whole of the other species. One can see that he perverted even the principle upon which he justified his actions to commit genocide.

From this case study it can be seen that in order for Hitler to enforce his views upon the nation – he **indoctrinated their minds** on a conscious and subconscious level to prepare them to accept his own agenda (going to war). In his planting of the idea into the nation he **infiltrated every level of society** with the “themes” of his ideas (everything was militarized). Hitler **perverted ideas** so that the “bad” was made good and should even be seen as something to be aspired for. In this way going to war, killing brutally etc. was made something to aspire to.

Furthermore he declared himself to be **“god” over the nation** – whatever he said is what had to be done without question, **complete compliant obedience** was required. In order to attain this he used **fear** as his main weapon against the people – whoever did not obey his principles were placing their very lives in danger, in this way he forced his way onto the nation.

He also propagated the idea of a superior race that were to be born, that they “had the right of way” and are seen as the “gods” upon the earth.

---

<sup>27</sup> Survival of the fittest. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Survival\\_of\\_the\\_fittest](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Survival_of_the_fittest))

**Deception** played a major role in the German's accepting that they were "superior" and was even made out to be "gods" while another race were made to be inferior and animal like. Based on this deception it did not matter what the "superior" race did to the Jews as they were seen as animals with no worth or value. This led to the extinction of millions of Jews during the holocaust.

In summarizing Hitler's principles: indoctrination of ideas into the mind, deceiving the nation into believing that they are superior to another nation (instilling pride), setting himself up as god, perverting the truth and replacing it with lies – good is bad and bad is good and finally instilling fear in order to gain and maintain control. These same principles are used in contemporary doctrines in order to indoctrinate mankind into accepting the coming New World Order.

The following sections will deal with some contemporary "religions" or movements and their goals as they pertain to establish the goals of the New World Order as prophesied in the Bible upon the earth.

### **3. THE NEW AGE MOVEMENT: A NEW WORLD RELIGION?**

The New Age Movement is a Western Spiritual movement that "developed" in the second half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century.

According to wikipedia<sup>28</sup>:

***"drawing on both Eastern and Western spiritual and metaphysical traditions and infusing them with influences from self-help and motivational psychology, holistic health, parapsychology, consciousness research and quantum physics."***

---

<sup>28</sup> New Age. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/New\\_Age](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/New_Age))

The New Age started in the late 1960's and consists of several different religions combined into one with the basic premise of searching for the "Universal truth" and the attainment of the highest individual human potential<sup>29</sup>. It combines cosmology, astrology, esotericism, alternative medicine, music, collectivism, sustainability and nature – it is characterized by each individual's approach to practices and philosophies but it rejects religion and dogma<sup>30</sup>. Different religions and beliefs are incorporated into a fruit salad of "whatever works for you". It includes a combination of atheism, monotheism, classical pantheism, naturalistic pantheism, pantheism to polytheism combined with science and Gaia philosophy.

The term New Age (NA) refers to the New Age of Aquarius<sup>31</sup> in astrology. The NA claims to hold a holistic world view and one of its main aims is to create a spirituality without borders or confining dogmas that emphasizes that the Mind, Body and Spirit are all interrelated<sup>32</sup>. The New Age Movement is based upon the "unity in diversity"<sup>33</sup> principle and incorporates holistic health, esoteric philosophy, scientific teachings and all revolves around **peace and world goodwill**. It attempts to create a worldview that includes both science and spirituality. In fact **spirituality is promoted as a science**<sup>34</sup>.

NA has its roots in mysticism<sup>35</sup>, Medieval astrology and alchemy, Hermeticism and beliefs in animal magnetism (a belief that animals exert a invisible natural force<sup>36</sup>)<sup>37</sup>.

---

<sup>29</sup> Ruffino David, Jordan Joseph (2010) *Unholy Communion: The Alien Abduction Phenomenon, Where It Originates And How It Stops*. USA: Defender Publishing House, p. 87.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid.

<sup>31</sup> An astrological age is a time period which astrology postulates parallel major changes in the development of Earth's inhabitants, particularly relating to culture, society and politics. There are twelve astrological ages corresponding to the twelve zodiacal signs in western astrology such as Aquarius.

<sup>32</sup> New Age. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/New\\_Age](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/New_Age))

<sup>33</sup> Cumbe Constance. *The Hidden Dangers of The Rainbow. The New Age Movement and Our coming Age of Barbarism*. South Africa: Bet-El Publishers. p. 54.

<sup>34</sup> Hunt Dave, McMahon T.A. (1988) *The New Spirituality. A consumers guide to the exploding New Age Movement*. USA: Harvest House Publishers. p. 57.

<sup>35</sup> Cumbe Constance. *The Hidden Dangers of The Rainbow. The New Age Movement and Our coming Age of Barbarism*. South Africa: Bet-El Publishers. p.54.

<sup>36</sup> Animal magnetism ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Animal\\_magnetism](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Animal_magnetism))

<sup>37</sup> New Age. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/New\\_Age](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/New_Age))

---

The Movement worships different pagan deities such as Pan, Buddha, Shiva and even Lucifer himself<sup>38</sup>.

The New Agers expect their messiah or the *Maitreya*, a world leader who is a teacher and modern man concerned with modern problems on the political, social, and economic front, to return to the earth. He also has extraordinary spiritual power and he has plans to build a new world<sup>39</sup>.

He is to be the fifth reincarnation of Buddha who the Buddhists are expecting to return to the earth. In order to appeal to the Christians New Agers say that the Maitreya is the Christ, to the Moslems, Iman Mahdi, and to the Jews, Krishna<sup>40</sup>.

As stated, this is the “perfect man” who are to bring world peace and establish all kinds of moral values on the earth. According to them he has a few goals in mind: a universal credit card system, a world food authority with which he could control the world’s food supply, universal tax and a one world religion. This is all in accordance with Bible prophecies for the end times about the antichrist who are to appear on the earth (Revelation 13:13-17, Daniel 7:25, 6:9-11, 7:14-17, 12:11, 13:1-5).

New Agers teach that all things are ***interconnected and interdependent*** according to the “Doctrine of Wholeness” also, the “Doctrine of At-One-Ment” (which may be the false perverted teaching for the truth of God’s Word for atonement). The New Age doctrines are promoting Eastern mysticism and shamanism that “equips” the everyday man to explore mystical experiences and psychic powers, by accepting these one is drawn into the “Sorcerers World”<sup>41</sup>.

---

<sup>38</sup> Cumbe Constance. *The Hidden Dangers of The Rainbow. The New Age Movement and Our coming Age of Barbarism.* South Africa: Bet-El Publishers. p.54.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid. p.19.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid. p.20

<sup>41</sup> Ibid. p.59.

New Age comprises a variety of different feats to uphold the religion and to give what it promises to its followers:

***"Sorcery's promise of magical solutions to every conceivable problem makes it almost irresistible. The perpetual youth offered by Yoga, the miraculous curative powers attributed to crystals or herbal tea, and the eternal route of second chances guaranteed by reincarnation are typical examples of New Age promises which appeal to a universal human weakness"***

Many New Age "rituals" involve emptying the mind or going into ***altered states of consciousness*** to contact the spirit world for advice. What is actually happening is that New Agers are talking to demonic spirits who present themselves as "angels of light" or guidance spirits. These "spiritual experiences" forms a central part of the New Age movement – mediation, psychotechnologies and other means are used to attain altered states of consciousness which leaves them open to ***demonic influence***.

One method employed developed by Jose Silva, known as the Silva Method (or Silva Mind control<sup>42</sup>) is based upon "psychic" powers that are alleged to be available when one is in an altered state of consciousness. One is then to use "inner guides" to provide information about other people or places. The New Age movement is especially characterized by contact with spiritual entities or masters of the universe (demons)<sup>43</sup>. This is nothing other than contact with demon spirits that the Bible clearly forbids as it leads to bondage and gives legal right to demonic entities into ones life:

***"Regard not them that have familiar spirits, neither seek after wizards, to be defiled by them: I am the LORD your God."***

***Leviticus 19:31***

---

<sup>42</sup> Cumbey Constance. The Hidden Dangers of The Rainbow. The New Age Movement and Our coming Age of Barbarism. South Africa: Bet-El Publishers.p. 64.

<sup>43</sup> Hunt Dave, McMahon T.A. (1988) The New Spirituality. A consumers guide to the exploding New Age Movement. USA: Harvest House Publishers. p. 107.

New Agers draw their inspiration from these spirit guides and believe themselves to be initiates under the guidance of these spirits and to be part of the “Great White Brotherhood<sup>44</sup>”. These guides are “accessed” through various means but especially through meditation. They also believe in the “Law of Avatars” taken from Eastern mysticism that states that at the beginning of every New Age the “Solar Logos” (an universal entity to which the Trinity of the Bible is inferior according to the New Agers) sends out “The Christ” or a lesser avatar to overshadow a human being and working through them imparts necessary teachings to the world to “help its citizens move forward into the New Age<sup>45</sup>.” This is nothing more than “spirit guides” which the Bible clearly forbids as it gives entry of demons into ones’ life.

Through the act of “channelling” a person in the New Age religion can make contact with spiritual entities or rather demons, and receive messages from them. They are able to “contact” these entities (demons) who then give them information about themselves, their intentions and the future of the earth. In this way the false doctrines of the demons are given to the humans as believable “truths”. As was stated, because these “spirit guides” exist in the spiritual realm, those who contact them are completely vulnerable to accepting their false messages.

Not only are they opening themselves up, they are also giving these demons the right to manifest and be on the earth!

What are the messages given to the humans by the demons? The demons, according to Leo Sprinkle, professor of Guidance and counselling of the University of Wyoming, are here to help us [the earth” move into the New Age. According to him these “wise” entities are teaching humankind lessons through channelling<sup>46</sup>.

---

<sup>44</sup> Cumbey Constance. *The Hidden Dangers of The Rainbow. The New Age Movement and Our coming Age of Barbarism.* South Africa: Bet-El Publishers. p. 46.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid. p.67.

<sup>46</sup> Ibid.

New Agers are to believe that the earth will undergo a “cleansing” in which all those who do not believe or are willing to accept the New Age doctrines will be wiped from the earth. This is very much akin to the euphemisms that Hitler used before killing all the Jews.

The New Age movement has infiltrated the whole of our society on every aspect. It is a worldwide network with many different sub groups movements: Holistic Movement, Humanistic Psychology, Transpersonal Psychology, Humanistic Movement, New Thought, Third Wave, Third Force, New Spirituality, Human Potential Development, Secular Humanism, Humanism. Holistic Health Centres, Montessori schools, Waldorf education, Transcendental Meditation (TM), mind control courses, hunger projects, Whole Earth catalogues, health food stores, disarmament campaigns, animal liberation<sup>47</sup> etc. has all influenced society and has become a part of contemporary everyday life.

Contact with demons are clear in the New Age community, only they are portrayed as wise counsellors and their messages of deceit is that they are here to help the earth move into the New Age.

The New Age doctrines involves opening oneself up to contact with these demons thereby leading to possession through various means of reaching an “altered state of consciousness”.

In Christian seminary students are being taught that they are to “do theology” instead of “parroting old theology written for another age, another continent and another culture<sup>48</sup>”. They are told that one can find Christ in the Koran, the Venas, the Bhagavad Gita and other Hindu based scriptures.

---

<sup>47</sup> Cumbey Constance. The Hidden Dangers of The Rainbow. The New Age Movement and Our coming Age of Barbarism. South Africa: Bet-El Publishers. p.40.

<sup>48</sup> Ibid.



On the religious front monotheistic religions like Christianity, Judaism and Islam are not tolerated within the New Age Movement<sup>49</sup>:

***“Esoteric Philosophy reconciles all nations, strips every one of its outward human garments, and shows the root of each to be individual with that of every other great religion. It proves the necessity of a Divine Absolute Principle in Nature. It denies Deity no more than it does the sun. Esoteric Philosophy has never rejected God in Nature, nor Deity as the absolute and abstract. It only refuses to accept any of the Gods of the so-called monotheistic religions, God’s created by man in his own image and likeness, a blasphemous and sorry caricature of the ever unknowable.”***

In other words Christianity will not be tolerated. Notice the attack on the ***image of mankind*** as they are not to have that identity for themselves. The New Agers have boldly set out their plan for a new mandatory religion that completely breaks with the concept of Jesus as the Christ and God as the Father. The New Age Gospel is advocated to human beings by the demons (aliens, wise counsellors, or spiritual entities contacted during “channeling”) and consists of the following doctrines<sup>50,51</sup>:

- ***Belief in an impersonal God***
- ***Endless improvement in the hereafter***
- ***Men are not lost sinners in need of divine mercy***
- ***Christ was divine only in the sense that all men are alleged to be divine***
- ***The Cross was not an atonement for man’s sin***

---

<sup>49</sup> Cumbey Constance. The Hidden Dangers of The Rainbow. The New Age Movement and Our coming Age of Barbarism. South Africa: Bet-El Publishers. p.45-46

<sup>50</sup> Thomas I.D.E (2008) The Omega Conspiracy, Satan’s last assault on God’s Kingdom. USA: Anamalos Publishing House, p. 142.

<sup>51</sup> Ruffino David, Jordan Joseph (2010) Unholy Communion: The Alien Abduction Phenomenon, Where It Originates And How It Stops. USA: Defender Publishing House, p. 96.

- **Christ's resurrection was a mere materialization (or others claim an alien Intervention)**
- **Jesus Christ was just another "ascended master" half human, half alien**
- **Man's hopes lies in human works and not divine grace**
- **Man can attain godhood**
- **Reincarnation**
- **Karma**
- **Moral relativism (everyone has their own truth)**
- **Pantheism (nature is god and god is nature)**

From this brief summary it is easy to see how these doctrines are **in direct contrast** to what the Word of God teaches. It is seen to attack Christianity at its very core in claiming that man needs no atonement for his sin for which Jesus Christ died (Galatians 1:4, 1 Corinthians 15:3, 1 Peter 3:18) and openly discredits Jesus Christ as the Savior of mankind (John 14:6) and Son of God (John 3:16) as well as denies His resurrection (Matthew 28:6, Mark 16:6, Luke 24:7).

The Bible states that mankind has a sin nature and that God sent His Only Begotten Son to bear the sins of the world (Galatians 3:13) so that through Him mankind are able to obtain atonement from their sins.

By the same token these demons who are contacted have also explicitly claimed that "Jesus and the Bible are not valid"<sup>52</sup>.

Without this atonement no one will be allowed into heaven or be called a child of the One true Living God (John 14:6) and not by any good deeds or works (which are regarded as filthy rags before the Lord, Isaiah 64:6).

---

<sup>52</sup> Quayle Stephen (2003) Genetic Armageddon, Todays technology Tomorrows Monsters. USA: End Time Thunder Publications, p. 94.

The Bible prophesies that in the end times mankind will go after their own lusts and follow whatever “tickles their ears”:

***“For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.”***

***2 Timothy 4:3***

From only looking into the New Age phenomenon on the surface one can see that basic truths of even the Bible can be taken and made into something that suits every persons’ own desires. Through this “moral relativism” every person is said to have his or her own truth while Jesus Christ said that He is the Only Truth, the light and the Way (John 14:6).

The New Age doctrines are not only promoted on a spiritual front. “Wizards” is a game used in Southern California, used to teach children how to spell; it promotes demonology and sorcery [on which many New Age doctrines are based] and humorously portrays Satan as the ultimate leader<sup>53</sup>.

Children’s programs are flooded with New Age doctrines that promotes spells and sorcery by using powers, such as the Harry Potter series of films. Contacting spiritual entities is something that is promoted in children’s programs and intrigues their young minds to explore this phenomenon with devastating results.

The Bible warns about contacting the spiritual world – even if it is just through games like the Ouija board.

Books are available on every topic of the occultic rituals, mediation, yoga, psychotechnologies (visualization, autosuggestion, hypnotherapy, guided imagery - all techniques to ensure ones contact with demonic entities).

---

<sup>53</sup> Hunt Dave, McMahon T.A. (1988) *The New Spirituality. A consumers guide to the exploding New Age Movement.* USA: Harvest House Publishers. p. 268.

Science courses, biofeedback (uses Zen and meditation to maintain alpha brain waves), music meditation, acupuncture, acupressure. These books and teachings have flooded bookstores and these mysticism principles have become a part of homes throughout the world, many times with people ignorant of its origin or meaning.

In the industry New Age teachings such as those from the Pacific Institute by Lou Tice are used on a large scale to encourage employees and to help them to envision a better life for themselves by using techniques of visualization. One is to create ones' own world by ones thought processes and by downplaying the negative parts of life, one is to have a better, happier life. The next step, since one is already determining ones' own destiny with ones **thoughts** is to believe that one is a god oneself.

One is supposed to let the Spirit of God be in control of ones' life and destiny. These teachings based upon New Age doctrines leads one in exactly the opposite direction – to trust oneself for ones' own destiny.

The media has been infiltrated with the New Age doctrines of astrology as one is able to read ones' daily "horoscope" – a personalized form of divination. Reading these New Age based "prescriptions" for ones' life opens a door for the enemy and his demons to enter ones' life as this practise has clearly been forbidden in the Bible.

On a political front, the New Age promotes a mandatory New World Religion, a universal credit card system, establishment of a World Food Authority, World Health Authority, universal tax etc. The idea of Segmented Polycentric Integrated Networks or "SPIN" is a network in which organizations of the New Age have "achieved synergy" thereby maximizing their strength through the use of "networking"<sup>54</sup>.

---

<sup>54</sup> Hunt Dave, McMahon T.A. (1988) The New Spirituality. A consumers guide to the exploding New Age Movement. USA: Harvest House Publishers, p.59.

---

Businesses are in this sense “becoming one” by collaborating with each other in accepting the New Age doctrines in the business.

New Age spokesmen openly promote the replacement of the current political system with a bioregional Parliament and a “Planetary Guidance System” – of which the “Planetary Initiative for the World We Choose” is the main vehicle through which this political goal is driven<sup>55</sup>. Only the very elite have membership to the Planetary Initiatives’ “World Council of Wise Persons”.

One can see the drive towards establishing a single parliamentary system in the world. Note the name of this one world parliamentary system – it incorporates a “global” view by incorporating the words “Planetary”. This leaves room for “things” that are not “planetary” as will be seen.

The Planetary Initiative and the World Council for Wise Persons are synergistically enhanced by the parallel networking operations with organizations such as the New World Alliance, Club of Rome, World Goodwill, Lucis Trust etc. The Movement believes in an “inner government” of our planet by hierarchy of spirits called the “Masters of Wisdom”.

### **3.1 Exopolitics**

Exopolitics refers to political relations within the scope of the universe<sup>56</sup>. In his book *Exopolitics*, Alfred Lambremont Webre, gives an exopolitics model for the operation of politics, government and law in an “intelligent” universe and provides an operational bridge between models of terrestrial politics, government and law and the larger models of politics, government and law in the proposed society of the greater universe<sup>57</sup>.

---

<sup>55</sup> Cumbe Constance. *The Hidden Dangers of The Rainbow. The New Age Movement and Our coming Age of Barbarism*. South Africa: Bet-El Publishers, p.62

<sup>56</sup> Alfred Webre. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Alfred\\_Webre](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Alfred_Webre))

<sup>57</sup> Ibid.

Webre<sup>58</sup>, a lawyer, gives his model for Exopolitics:

***“The Exopolitics model informs us that, in reality, Earth appears to be an isolated planet in the midst of a populated Universe.”***

Webre believes, according to the “Zoo hypothesis”, that the planet has been quarantined and that the earth is now being given the opportunity to join the rest of the spiritually evolved universe society in peace, in other words “an opportunity to avoid environmental global destruction or global self-destruction through war<sup>59</sup>”. In 2011, the Australian publication Veritas Magazine asked Webre to review the first decade of Exopolitics (2000-2010) that included about 30 nations releasing their secret extraterrestrial and UFO files. In April 2012 Webre launched the ExoUniversity.org that offers online education of exosciences, psi-sciences and exopolitics<sup>60</sup>.

In his book he explains:

***“[The] Universe society consists of advanced, highly organized, and consciously evolving civilizations.***

***Universe civilizations function within our own intrastellar Universe, as well as within other dimensions in the Universe-at-large. Advanced Universe civilizations exist in other dimensions parallel to our own. They access not only our own planet and galaxy but also all of interstellar space.”***

Notice how the earth is placed in a “predicament” in that they are quarantined from the “rest of the universe”. The earth now “also needs to move over into the “Age of Aquarius” in order for the earth to again “become a part of” the Universal Political system.

---

<sup>58</sup> Webre Lamremont Alfred (2005) Exopolitics: Politics, Government and Law in the Universe. USA: UniverseBooks. p. 5.

<sup>59</sup> Alfred Webre. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Alfred\\_Webre](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Alfred_Webre))

<sup>60</sup> Ibid.

This may leave room for future applications by those who are behind the NA in using it as a motivation for everyone the “help move the earth” into the NA. By establishing and believing the doctrines of Exopolitics many are being deceived into believing its lies. A problem is created (the earth needs to move into the New Age) that needs to be solved by accepting the doctrines of the New Age, and Exopolitics are promoting this doctrine from a political point of view.

The New Age attacks the authority of God’s Word; it denies that one will die (reincarnation), claims that man can be god himself, and a deification of Lucifer and other deities – the so-called “Masters of Wisdom.” The Age old lie of Satan: “thou shalt not surely die...” (Genesis 3:4) rings true again in the New Age doctrines.

New Agers claim that they are a “new species” – they have evolved into *homo noeticus* by employing mind-expansion techniques such as mediation. This is akin to Hitler’s Aryan race and it is believed by the New Agers that one can only “achieve” this super race status through “consciousness expansion” i.e. the opening up of ones’ spirit and life to the entrance of demonic entities.

New Agers actively believe in evolution, it is central to their theology. The Movement teaches that all of mankind have evolved “but some of us are more highly evolved than others” or “some of us manifest our divinity more than others”. One can see that by accepting the false doctrine of evolution, the New Age doctrines provide for the creation of a “superior race” above another – the same way that Hitler promoted one race above another.

One of the reoccurring lies that are blatantly told within the New Age is that one is to attain godhood - or that one is god oneself. Essentially New Age philosophy proclaims: “Man created God in his own image”, the complete opposite of the Biblical statement that God created man in His Image (Genesis 1:27). Man is to “become” god himself through the opening of his mind (providing access to demons). The goal of the “new religions” melting into one is clear: **man is god himself** and god is in everything. Mankind is to “transcend its limitations” in order to become God.

In the New Age doctrines, humans aspiring to achieve this “godhood” can become one with the “Christ consciousness” that fills the universe and therefore can become part of the “collective Christ consciousness<sup>61</sup>”. J.D. Buck<sup>62</sup> the human race are to become like Christ in the most perfected from:

***“It is far more important that men should strive to become Christs than that they should believe that Jesus was Christ. If the Christ-state can be attained by but one human being during the whole evolution of the race, then the evolution of man is a farce and human perfection an impossibility...Jesus is no less Divine because all men may reach the same Divine perfection.”***

Each human being is to reach “divinity” but this can only be completed as a collective. This is a counterfeit lie from Satan for the truth that one can receive the Holy Spirit of Jesus Christ once one accepts Him into ones heart as the Only Lord and Saviour. Again, in contrast to the New Age teaching, one never “becomes” God – but the Holy Spirit of God lives on the inside of man:

***“But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness.”***

***Romans 8:9-11***

Once a child of God one becomes part of the body of Christ and becomes one with Him in a sense that mankind are the branches and He is the Vine (John 15:5). Mankind is in this way a part of Him – but is not Him.

---

<sup>61</sup> Ruffino David, Jordan Joseph (2010) *Unholy Communion: The Alien Abduction Phenomenon, Where It Originates And How It Stops*. USA: Defender Publishing House, p. 97.

<sup>62</sup> Horn Thomas, Horn Nita, Stearman Gary, Hutchins Noah, Missler Chuck, Gilbert Sharon, McTernan John, Bennett Michael, Meekins Frederick, Teichrib Carl, Woodward Doug, Hamp Douglas, Putnam Cris. *Pandemonium's engine How the End of the Church Age, the rise of Transhumanism, and the Coming of the Übermensch (Overman) Herald Satan's Imminet and Final Assault on the Creation of God*. Crane MO: Defender. p. 310.

---



Some New Agers believe that they have reached this goal and are now part of this “collective Christ” – this of course, displays the cunning deception masterfully achieved by Satan<sup>63</sup>.

The terms “spiritual evolution” and “raising ones vibratory level” in the New Age are used to describe what is called the Luciferic Initiation – a term used only in the inner circles of the New Age. It entails accepting the “final gift of wholeness” from none other than Lucifer himself.

In the words of a New Age expert, David Spangler<sup>64</sup>:

***“Lucifer comes to give us the final gift of wholeness. If we accept it then he is free and we are free. This is the Luciferic Initiation. It is one that many people now, and in the days ahead, will be facing, for it is an initiation in the New Age.”***

This Luciferic initiation is waited upon with enthusiasm by New Age followers only, this “initiation” will open them up to demonic possession and result in them giving up their rightful place in the Kingdom of God.

Another doctrine in the New Age (also coupled with the deception of reincarnation) is that good and evil are present in every human being – and what is right for one might be wrong for another while no one has the right to judge what is right or wrong.

Not only does this create the opportunity to justify ones’ own sin it also sets man up as his own god in that he must now decide what is right or wrong according to his own standards instead of trusting the truth in the Word of God to direct his life.

---

<sup>63</sup> Horn Thomas, Horn Nita, Stearman Gary, Hutchins Noah, Missler Chuck, Gilbert Sharon, McTernan John, Bennett Michael, Meekins Frederick, Teichrib Carl, Woodward Doug, Hamp Douglas, Putnam Cris. Pandemonium’s engine How the End of the Church Age, the rise of Transhumanism, and the Coming of the Übermensch (Overman) Herald Satan’s Imminet and Final Assault on the Creation of God. Crane MO: Defender. p. 98.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 97.

In almost all religions of the world the earth's spirit as a mother is incarnated through various goddesses. In this we find Inanna of the Sumerians, Ishtar (Babylonians), Fortuna (Romans), Hathor (Egyptians), Shingmoo (Chinese), Herta (Germans) and the Queen of Heaven (Hebrews), Hera (Greece, as the queen of the Olympian goddesses) and before her Gaia<sup>65</sup>. Which brings us to another major doctrine advocated by aliens to humans is that of the Gaian philosophy. It holds that god is nature and nature is god – Gaia the earth goddess – is said to be the spirit of a living planet that can be harmed by mankind and their actions. Worshipping the earth as a “living spirit” is to forsake the God Who created the Universe and man's actions are once again directed by “not harming the earth” instead of being based on the truth of the Bible.

In summary, the New Age movement prides itself in the love, peace and goodwill that it propagates as a world religion. They are expecting a false Christ to arrive to take control of the world affairs, and as the Bible predicts he will be a man of eloquent stature in all his doings, but will be the anti-Christ. There is a drive towards “oneness” within the New Age movement – a one world religion, political system, monetary system etc.

Every human being on the earth is to join the “collective consciousness” or “The Force of nature” as the mother goddess, the earth, is worshipped as sacred. One is to join this collective consciousness by altering ones' own consciousness. This of course, opens the mind to demons for entering ones' life as it is based on the principles of mediation and “blanking ones' mind”. The doctrines taught by the New Age movement is in direct contrast to what the Word of God teaches about God, Jesus Christ, mankind and their purpose on the earth.

Most importantly is the propaganda behind the New Age fad: it has clearly infiltrated all levels of society, is pushing its goals on every front in order to attain “oneness” in every level of society.

---

<sup>65</sup> Horn Thomas R (2007) Nephilim Stargates The year 2012 and the return of the watchers. Crane, USA: Anomalos Publishing, p. 63-64.

Its alluring message coupled with supernatural manifestations makes it hard to resist especially since one is able to attain godhood by giving in to its plea to become “one” with the force. Notice how the God of the Bible is replaced with an “impersonal force.” Also, there will be no tolerance for those who are not willing to accept the lies of the New Age doctrines, just like the Bible prophecies in the Book of Revelations.

The next important belief system or doctrine is one that takes some of the principles of the New Age and repackages it into something totally different but with the same goal in mind. The principles that mankind is to become “gods” themselves, that they are immortal and that a superior race is to exist can also be seen at the root of the neatly packaged lie of Transhumanism.

#### **4. TRANSHUMANISM**

The official TH definition can be found in a document adopted by the World Transhumanism Association (WTA), renamed Humanity+ in 2008, that defines transhumanism as follows<sup>66</sup>:

***“(1) The intellectual and cultural movement that affirms the possibility  
And desirability of fundamentally improving the human condition  
through applied reason, especially by developing and making widely  
available technologies to eliminate aging and to greatly enhance human  
intellectual, physical, and psychological capacities.***

***(2) The study of the ramifications, promises, and potential dangers of  
technologies that will enable us to overcome fundamental human  
limitations, and the related study of the ethical matters involved in  
developing and using such technologies.”***

---

<sup>66</sup> Bostrom, Nick (2003) The transhumanism FAQ, A General introduction. Version 2.1. Oxford University; Oxford.

From the definitions one can already deduct their clear goal: to “fundamentally improve the human condition through applied **reason**”. TH has its roots in the Renaissance humanism and the Age of **Enlightenment**. This translates to mankind trading in their Creator God for their ability to reason and that they are now [through their ability to reason] responsible for their own destiny. They are also to “improve their current state.”

In this cultural phenomenon called TH, THs are of the opinion that mankind is at a very early stage in their “evolutionary development” and should be altered in order to “enhance” their intellectual, physical and psychological capabilities as well as strive to eliminate aging . This could be accomplished, they believe, through various modern day sciences but would require fundamentally changing the human genetic makeup.

The eventual goal of THs is to become a post human (PH) which is defined according to the WTA as “a being whose basic capacities so radically exceed those of present-day humans as to no longer be unambiguously human by our current standards<sup>67</sup>” .

According to this definition this is a stage where the human being will be altered in such a way that they no longer represent the human species. To put it in other words: the PH will be “something other than human<sup>68</sup>.”

Transhumanism is but the enduring drive of man to become god through science: **ascension through engineering**<sup>69</sup>. The reoccurring theme of one becoming a “superhuman” is seen again in TH.

---

<sup>67</sup> Elliot, Carl (2003) Humanity 2.0 Transhumanists believe that human nature's a phase we'll outgrow, like adolescence. Someday we'll be full-fledged adult posthumans with physical and intellectual powers of which we can now only dream. But will progress really make perfect? *The Wilson Quarterly* 27 (4) pp. 13-20.

<sup>68</sup> Michael Gilbert Sherbert 2010 Transhumanism as a religious product of the West: A comparative analysis with Christianity. A Master's Essay Submitted to the Department of Religious Studies in conformity of the requirements for the degree of Master of Arts. Queen's University Kingston, Ontario, Canada

<sup>69</sup> Ibid.

PH or the final form of the enhanced human modified by current technologies is believed to will possess the following advantageous traits<sup>70</sup>: superior intelligence that far surpasses any human genius currently alive, resistant to diseases, resilient to aging – to be young forever, control over own desires, moods and mental states, never feeling tired, hateful or irritated, increased capacity for pleasure, love, artistic appreciation and serenity, experience novel states of consciousness.

Notice that being posthuman involves experiencing **“novel states of consciousness”**. Not only does TH strive to genetically alter the human body but also to include the **spiritual side** where communication with spiritual entities will be made possible. This practise is strictly forbidden by God in His Word (Leviticus 20:27) as it opens one up for the possession by Satan and his demons. As part of the myriad of lies that accompanies transhumanism – **immortality** is also promised through science. The same promise of reincarnation that one “will not surely die” as Satan propagated to Eve in the Garden of Eden.

TH strongly disagrees and dissociates itself with the Eugenics movement by not promoting the elimination of the “genetically unfit” or “inferior” people with certain diseases, but rather [they are] **promoting self-direction and individual choice for evolution** and “correction<sup>71</sup>”.

They are just reformulating the lie of killing off the “inferior” human beings into uplifting the superior ones above the inferior ones. This all too familiar tone now in TH – creating superiority amongst humans by “bettering them” also rang true in the time of Hitler and the eugenics movement before and during the World War II, only it wasn’t by free choice.

---

<sup>70</sup> Bostrom Nick (2003) The transhumanism FAQ, A General introduction. Version 2.1. Oxford University. Oxford. ( <http://www.transhumanism.org/resources/FAQv21.pdf> )

<sup>71</sup> Transhumanism. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Transhumanism#Specter\\_of\\_coercive\\_eugenicism.28Eugenics\\_Wars\\_argument.29](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Transhumanism#Specter_of_coercive_eugenicism.28Eugenics_Wars_argument.29))

---

This is what resulted in nearly six million people losing their lives as a result of trying to create the superior Aryan race which the Germans thought themselves to be<sup>72</sup>:

***“[Eugenics] sought to create superior humans via improving genetics through selective breeding.”***

The fact that TH has “nothing to do” with Eugenics is a blatant lie – as its main aim is to “better humankind”. This by implication means that a “better race” will be developed or sought after. By giving mankind the “freedom of choice” to enhance themselves would create a distinction between those who are enhanced and those who are not (or so they would believe).

In the authors<sup>73</sup> work, *The Emergence of the Techno-Dimensional Era as Instrument in Human Enhancement as Part of a Secret Alien Agenda*, it was shown that the **Fallen Angels**, or the adversaries of God who were thrown out of heaven together with Satan in his rebellion against God, have become more prevalent in their sightings as the modern day **Aliens**<sup>74</sup>.

It is these “entities” that are channelled through New Age ways and mediums to give “wisdom” to human kind. Their agenda is still the same as that of Satan, to deceive mankind into worshipping them and Satan as their god. They also aim to turn away the human race from their True Creator through lies and deception.

In summary, Transhumanism promotes the betterment of mankind through various sciences in order to become a “posthuman” or a superior human race. The use of “novel states of consciousness” is akin to the doctrines of the New Age.

---

<sup>72</sup> Quayle Stephen. Genetic Armageddon, Today's technology tomorrow's monsters. USA: End Time Thunder Publishers. p. 42-43.

<sup>73</sup> Van der Walt Marilize (2012) *The Emergence of the Techno-Dimensional Era as Instrument in Human Enhancement as Part of a Secret Alien Agenda*. Pretoria: Radah Ministries. p. 245-368.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid.

Important here is that man also replaces God for their ability to reason thereby placing them in charge of their own destinies instead of relying on God and His plan for ones' life. Man is also to attain "godhood" by bettering themselves through technology.

The idea of man being divine and access to the supernatural is reiterated in another faction of "religion" that has been prevalent on the earth in contemporary times. "Mother Earth worship" or Nature worship is another fad that has taken captive the imaginations of many as a result of its "mysterious" intrigues. The best example of this type of "worship" is seen in Witchcraft.

## **5. WITCHCRAFT: WORSHIPPING THE EARTH MOTHER GODDESS**

***"You can call it occult if you want, even supernatural. I prefer to think that we witches just find the super in the natural"<sup>75</sup>.***

It is upon the principles of the "goddess religion" that witchcraft is based. Witchcraft can be seen as the religion of ecology – its goal is "harmony with nature", so that life may not just survive but thrive. The symbol of the Goddess conveys the spiritual power both to challenge systems of oppression and to create new, life orientated cultures.

In the "Craft" all people are already seen as manifest gods, and differences in colour, race, and customs are welcomed as signs of the myriad beauty of the goddess. The ***"art of changing consciousness at will"<sup>76</sup>*** are used to create states of ecstasy of union with the "divine" (demons). These states may also be used to achieve material results such as healing since in the Craft there is no split between spirit and matter.

---

<sup>75</sup> Hunt Dave, McMahon T.A. (1988) The New Spirituality. A consumers guide to the exploding New Age Movement. USA: Harvest House Publishers. p 91.

<sup>76</sup> Starhawk. (1979) The Spiral Dance: Rebirth of the Ancient Religion of the Mother Goddess. USA: Harper&Row. p. 34.

Starhawk, a witch, describes Mother Earth as follow<sup>77</sup>s:

***“Mother Goddess is reawakening and we can begin to recover our primal birth right the sheer intoxicating joy of being alive. We can open new eyes and see that there is nothing to be saved from, no struggle of life against the universe, no God outside the world to be feared and obeyed only the Goddess, the Mother the turning spiral that whirls us in and out of existence.***

***Whose winking eye is the pulse of being, birth, death, rebirth, whose laughter bubbles and courses through all things and who is found only through love: love of trees, of stones, of sky and clouds, of scented blossoms and thundering waves, of all that runs and flies and swims and crawls on her face, though love of ourselves; life dissolving world creating orgasmic love of each other each of us unique and natural as a snowflake, each of us her own star, her Child, her lover, her beloved, her Self.”***

It is upon these principles that there is no split between spirit and nature, no concept of sin, no covenant or commandments against which one can sin. Everything is portrayed as being done out of and for “love” by this witch. Witchcraft or devil worship has been made something so alluring to the youth of the present day that many of them accept the lies and are deceived into thinking this way of life, abandoning God and Jesus Christ, for worshipping an idol (the “Mother Goddess”) would bring them happiness and peace.

The “supernatural” side of witchcraft – having “powers” is what “seals the deal” for most young people and they are pulled into its deceptions. It is through deception that one can be tricked into believing the lies of this “earth loving” peace giving cult that worships the devil.

---

<sup>77</sup> Ibid. p. 35.



In summary, the mother goddess worship also incorporates altered states of consciousness and deem themselves as gods. They also worship the “mother goddess” or nature as is propagated by the New Age religion.

She continues<sup>78</sup>:

***“Movements are like plants, Some like annuals, spring up in a season, take over the garden, flourish , and die when the winter comes. Others, and the Goddess movement is one of them, grow like perennials. In the first few years, most progress is underground. Only when they have developed strong roots do the plants spring into wild and exuberant growth. Perennials develop slowly, but they have staying power. They spring up anew when the winter ends. Their deep roots let them withstand drought. They live long, and reproduce from roots and runners as well as seeds...Over the last two decades the Goddess movement has grown from many seeds, like a garden of long lived flowers and healing herbs.”***

It is much akin to this principle of gradual growth that the enemy has based and executed his End Time plans for the establishment of the One World Order upon the earth. Through all of these indoctrinations the enemy has established his structures for world domination upon the earth.

Centuries of planning have gone into establishing this One World Order and Satan has managed to do this with his earthly agents, the Illuminati and the Illuminati bloodlines.

The next section will deal with the root cause of what is behind these doctrines that has been discussed.

---

<sup>78</sup>Starhawk. (1979) *The Spiral Dance: Rebirth of the Ancient Religion of the Mother Goddess*. USA: Harper&Row. p. 34.

## 6. THE ILLUMINATI AND SECRET SOCIETIES AS AGENTS BEHIND GLOBAL WORLD DOMINATION

The Illuminati has been studied for its involvement as part of global World Conspiracy. But many times the **spiritual religion** of the Illuminati has been overlooked<sup>79</sup>. The Illuminati was found by Adam Weishaupt in 1776, and he had but one goal in mind: to replace the church and monarchies with a few men who are to rule over the people<sup>80</sup>.

As an atheist and pursuing his humanistic goal, Weishaupt wanted to establish this *new secular order*<sup>81</sup>.

He discovered that if he were to combine his materialistic idea of establishing a “world elite” group of men who were rich with the pure Masonic religion whose goal was the enthronement of a group of elites as “gods on earth” that he would be thoroughly supported by his kinsmen.

The essence of the illuminist spirituality is based on the belief in a “god of forces” that is impersonal, yet has unlimited supernatural powers that can be accessed by these elite men – the gnostics – who know the “magic formula”<sup>82</sup>.

This magic formula consists of the powerful use of **ritual, symbols, and allegory** that rests upon the acceptance of **ancient pagan deities and mystery** teachings. This essentially replaces God as the Creator and exchanges Him for a false god that does not exist.

---

<sup>79</sup> Marrs Texe (2004) *Dark Majesty The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of A Thousand Points of Light*. Texas, USA: RiverCrest Publishing. p. 209.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid.

<sup>81</sup> Ibid.

<sup>82</sup> Ibid. p. 210.

At the heart of this **secret religion** is the belief that the “Great Architect of the Universe” or “Nature” or “God” has established a class and race system which is described as the “natural order” or “nature<sup>83</sup>”.

Nature (in other words “God”) then prescribes that the world will be organized into different classes of men – in this way “nature” has deemed that certain men are by divine prescription more elite than others.

This is the same basis principle applied in Hitler’s Aryan race – a superior race that were to be created that will rule the earth as masters or “gods”. This is considered the “Great work” of the Illuminati – the transformation of mankind on planet earth.

The idea and goal behind establishing the elite race is to gain control over the masses and rule them as their “lords”.

This is further reiterated in one of the “Secret doctrines” of the Illuminati<sup>84</sup>:

***“Mankind is obviously divided into god-informed men and lower human creatures...the sacred spark is missing in them and it is they who are the...inferior races on the globe...Verily mankind is “of one blood” but not of the same essence. We are the hot house...having in us a spark, which in them is latent.”***

One cannot help to think about the famous quote in the book *Animal Farm*:

***“‘All animals’, said the pigs, ‘are equal but some animals are more equal than others’<sup>85</sup>.”***

---

<sup>83</sup> Marrs Texe (2004) *Dark Majesty The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of A Thousand Points of Light*. Texas, USA: RiverCrest Publishing. p. 209.

<sup>84</sup> Marrs Texe (1996) *Circle of Intrigue: The Hidden inner circle of the Global Illuminati Conspiracy*. Texas, USA: Living Truth Publishers. 51.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid.

A clear distinction is made between the governing elite who believe themselves to possess this **spark of divinity**, and the “normal” human race. Like Manly P. Hall, a thirty three degree mason, proclaims<sup>86</sup>:

**“Wise men, the ancients believe, were a separate race, and to be born into this race it was necessary to develop the mind to a state of enlightened intelligence...It is this larger and coming race that will someday inherit the earth...The Golden Age will come again.”**

According to their doctrine, the determining factor that distinguishes these “superior” men from all the others, are those with the ability to **Reason**. As Weishaupt<sup>87</sup> puts it:

**“Reason will be the only code of man. This is one of our greatest secrets. When at last Reason becomes the religion of man, then will the problem be solved.”**

Reasoning (in the sense of science and “intellectual interchange”) is seen as superior to religion and revelation in order to “reform society and advance knowledge<sup>88</sup>.” By replacing the soul with reason, mankind is immediately responsible for his own salvation through his ability to reason instead of relying on Jesus Christ as his Saviour. One can see how the ability to reason quickly became the centrefold of what man should strive for and thereby replacing the Biblical teaching that Jesus Christ needs to be everything in ones’ life.

Reasoning is in direct contrast to what the Bible teaches which is to completely rely on the guidance on the Holy Spirit by faith and by living a life of reasoning the mind is opened to the **spirit of reason (demonic power)** which sets itself up against the knowledge of God.

---

<sup>86</sup> Marrs Texe (1996) Circle of Intrigue: The Hidden inner circle of the Global Illuminati Conspiracy. Texas, USA: Living Truth Publishers, p.52.

<sup>87</sup> Marrs Texe (2004) Dark Majesty The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of A Thousand Points of Light. Texas, USA: RiverCrest Publishing, p. 209.

<sup>88</sup> The Age of Enlightenment. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Age\\_of\\_enlightenment](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Age_of_enlightenment))

Man is then completely led astray as the spirit of reason vials the mind and keeps the person in deception while the working of the Holy Spirit is absent.

This notion of reasoning became so important that it resulted in man's **reasoning being enthroned as a deity** with the ultimate symbol of ancient paganism: the Goddess of Reason<sup>89</sup>. This idea was transferred throughout the 18<sup>th</sup> and 19<sup>th</sup> century, and during the American Revolutionary War, the "Goddess" was especially celebrated as a symbol. She evolved to becoming the symbol of American freedom, the one who breaks the chains of bondage and thrashes tyrants – the symbol is: Lady Liberty. She was now seen as the Goddess who gives coequal, **enlightened men** (those who have the reasoning ability) freedom and liberty. Her statute bears the torch of light – the symbol of illumination – and she is celebrated as the one "who uplifts and frees mankind." Thus men's obsession with reasoning became an idol to be worshipped.

This pagan goddess is worshipped as an idol throughout America – few know of her occultic origin. Her pagan name is **Gaia** – after the ancient deity of the Greeks<sup>90</sup>. She is worshipped in modern day culture as "mother earth" by the New Agers and witchcraft alike. According to the central beliefs of the Illuminati, they practice this pagan religion which exalts and worships the ancient Sun God<sup>91</sup>. Only those in the highest ranks of the Illuminati Brotherhood know that they are actually **worshipping Lucifer** as their ultimate deity although many in the Order [of the Illuminati] do not know this or even profess him as their Lord. The mother goddess worship thus has its origin in sun god worship in the ancient times, but this "deity" found its way into the modern day culture through the workings of the Illuminati brotherhood.

The illuminated ones are considered to be capable of wielding the spiritual energies of both sides, both good and evil, light and darkness – or to put it plainly, **man becomes his own deity**.

---

<sup>89</sup> Marrs Texe (2004) *Dark Majesty The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of A Thousand Points of Light*. Texas, USA: RiverCrest Publishing. p. 211.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid. p. 212.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid. p. 213-214.

According to the Illuminati, God, being akin to a “force field” or “divine principle” is to be worshipped by two means: ritual and service. *Ritual* involves the conjuration of symbolic magic and the accessing of the neutral (two headed – dark and light) powers of the universe. The adoration of pagan deities during temple ceremonies and initiation should not be taken as literal worship but as allegorical worship of the neutral powers of the universe repositioned within the illuminated man. *Service* is regarded as obedience to ones “enlightened masters”; active aid and help to brothers and initiates – fellow illuminated ones and good works and philanthropy to the unenlightened world at large<sup>92</sup>.

Another principle of the Brotherhood is that they add no special regard or devotion for any specific deity, in other words Christianity holds no special merit. The Illuminati recognizes all as coequal in a universalist, all-encompassing view and no one can be claimed exclusive or unique. In this way an illuminist can uphold Christianity as his or her religion but they are not worshipping the same Christ and God as the Christian<sup>93</sup>.

From these accounts it can be seen that man is left to believe as he pleases, there are no moral absolutes, and one is to do as he wills or as stated by Aleister Crowley, a British Satanist proclaiming himself “the Beast, 666” – ***“Do as thou wilt shall be the whole new law”***<sup>94</sup>.

### **In summary:**

In these examples there are a view common themes that can be highlighted:

- Mankind is to attain “godhood” or become god himself
  - The age old lie of Satan to Eve that she could “become God herself”
- There must be an “enlightenment” of the consciousness
  - The opening up of ones’ mind will result in demonic infiltration

---

<sup>92</sup> Ibid. Marrs Texe (2004) *Dark Majesty The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of A Thousand Points of Light*. Texas, USA: RiverCrest Publishing. p. 209.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid. p. 213-214.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid. p. 216.

- All these examples replaced the God of the Bible with an “impersonal force” or with “the self and reasoning”
  - One is to have no other God’s before Him (Exodus 20:3)
- There is a drive toward “Oneness” with this impersonal force and in all other areas of life
  - Establishing a One World Order as prophesied in the Bible

These goals of the New World Order are all propagated in various forms by all of these different “world religions.” Although they are all presented differently discerning through the deceptions one can see their similarities. The New Age seems to be the vehicle that is used to drive the propaganda of the coming world deceptions the loudest. What is more alarming is that these goals are propagated in a way akin to the way that Hitler used during the holocaust.

The importance of **how** these goals are achieved needs to be highlighted in order to expose the importance of the **mind** in establishing the last prophesied kingdom on the earth. In order to indoctrinate a nation or even a **world system** in adopting the goals and themes of a One World Order one needs to follow the principles that Hitler imposed on the minds of the German nation.

One needs to get a firm grip on the principles of indoctrinating a nation with **false beliefs** and **fabrications of the mind** that are planted into the minds of the people of a nation or people group to follow a premeditated plan based on **selfish and ulterior motives** while additionally making them believe it is for their own good. This takes some cunning skills from the enemy.

The minds of the nations are being indoctrinated with New Age thinking such as the collective consciousness, and several Eastern mysticism fads being seen most rampantly throughout society today as was seen earlier in this chapter. New Age mysticism has **infiltrated every level of society**.

The **deceptions of the New Age are the most elaborate** with becoming one with nature is the only way for the earth to move into its new Age. Opening ones' mind to attain godhood and "to become enlightened" is seen **as something good** although the end result will be demonic infestation. New Agers are declaring themselves to be gods and those who do not comply with their religion will be exterminated (fear). All of these principles are working on the minds of humankind and will eventually result in the coming One World Order.

This idea behind the whole New World Order is found within the Bible when Satan claims:

***"For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High."***

***Isaiah 14:13-14***

Satan wants to set himself up as God – He wants to "replace" God from His Throne and rule the world. This, of course, is a preposterous feat as Satan 1) will never be akin to God – He is a **created being**, not the Creator, we know from Scripture that he is an archangel 2) he has **already been defeated** by Jesus Christ on the cross 3) he will be **defeated once and for all** at the Second Coming of Jesus Christ to this earth.

Lucifer himself is behind all the World elitists groups and as his "chess pieces" he has come to a point in which he will play his final moves in establishing the One World Order in order for him to be worshipped and to finally gain control of mankind, God's children.

Satan, of course knows, that he is a defeated foe and that his time is running out to collect the souls of men to take into hell with himself.



He will do this in a myriad of ways, but as a cunning enemy that he is, he will attack mankind where it matters the most, their minds. He will not stop or sleep or wait, he is out to kill, steal and destroy.

One can clearly see that Satan and his human agents – in the form of New Age propagandists, TH advocates, Witches promoting witchcraft as “loving” and the infamous Illuminati, have been working behind the scenes to reach and obtain goals that seem harmless at first. The outcome of such goals however results in the brutal murder of innocent people as was seen in Hitlers’ reign as is prophesied in the Bible.

The very same mind control principles that were used by Hitler are currently used to indoctrinate mankind to accept the New Age religion based on occultic mysticism as the New One World religion. Their propaganda is everywhere, in every aspect of life. They make the clear distinction between those who can attain godhood through “alternate states of consciousness” the “enlightened ones” and those who are “still in the dark” not wanting the “help the earth” move into its next age.

The “religion” makes it clear that they are not going to tolerate Christians, they “degraded” Jesus Christ to a mere “force in the universe” – the Christ consciousness. This not only pertains to the religion of the New Age, but is applied in all sections of life. But the goals remain the same – attain godhood by forsaking the One true Creator and then worshipping self which is in essence translated as open ones’ mind for the possession of demons through altered states of consciousness thereby placing oneself into bondage under Satan’s rule. Hereby Satan gets to control and rule mankind while at the same time exterminate those who do not accept him as the lord:

***“Those at the top of the Brotherhood are not just “on their way” to controlling the masses, they already possess a firm grip on men’s minds<sup>95</sup>.”***

---

<sup>95</sup> Marrs Texe (2004) Dark Majesty The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of A Thousand Points of Light.

The idea behind the New Age Religion is for the Illuminati to indoctrinate their pagan ideas into the minds of men; the ideas of unity and globalization in order to create a “World Mind” or “World Brain”<sup>96</sup>. Their occultic, psychological process will change all of society and result in a new and universal “cosmic consciousness” that will spread throughout the world<sup>97</sup> (or so they strive to achieve).

The idea is for men everywhere to be made to believe that they are to be transformed into “supermen” that will become “like gods” on the planet. This is easily achieved through **flattery** – every human being, in their selfish, sinful nature that are being told that they are a god-like species that are evolving towards perfection will have no trouble to believe this lie. But the clear message is given by the elite, some men are still subhuman, these human beings are responsible for polluting the earth and should be terminated.

The propaganda for achieving a World Brain is as follows<sup>98</sup>:

***“All men must be linked together into a great World Brain, Only through homogenization of men’s minds and an interlinking of human potential everywhere perfection can be achieved.***

***The only viable solution is to link the brains of all men into one giant superbrain. It is the entire species which has been developing, and it is the entire species which now must be linked into one superbeing.”***

Not only are the governing elite striving to have a One World Religion and One World Organization, they are also working towards “One Mind”. The idea behind this?

---

Texas, USA: RiverCrest Publishing. p. 229.

<sup>96</sup> Marrs Texe (2004) Dark Majesty The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of A Thousand Points of Light.

Texas, USA: RiverCrest Publishing. p. 229

<sup>97</sup> Ibid. p. 230.

<sup>98</sup> Ibid. p. 232.

The governing elite knows that if they can succeed in a **“global way of thinking”** it will enable them to establish the most elaborate and minute form of control over the affairs of men.

In this way “The Great Work” can be achieved: earth and its peoples will be illuminizd and perfected<sup>99</sup>. By establishing a network in which all peoples’ minds can be unified in terms of their: thoughts, desires, hungers, longings and even fears one can establish control over them.

The governing elite are planning to use mass mind control in order to **hypnotize the masses** and dissolve all differences so that a unity-conscious mind can be established. They will all be programmed to think the same way – the World Mind – made up of human brains.

The New Age elite are to be the rulers of this One World Mind – they will “program” the masses through occultic magic to become obedient, unified and completely open to the will and control of the elite. How will this happen?

Through what was learned through science and the view of the governing elite, the human brain is seen as **something that can be controlled from the outside**<sup>100</sup>. In other words, the elite believe that they can programme the minds of individuals to such an extent that they will be able to promote their own goals and aims.

If magical powers and advanced psycho-spiritual techniques of mind control the energy force can be manipulated so that the masses of people who are its components can be made to believe an illusion – that they themselves are in control of their own destiny’s – even better<sup>101</sup>.

---

<sup>99</sup> Marrs Texe (2004) Dark Majesty The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of A Thousand Points of Light. Texas, USA: RiverCrest Publishing, p. 233.

<sup>100</sup> Ibid.

<sup>101</sup> Ibid.

Thus a world brain made up of billions of deceived men and women blissfully unaware of its magical manipulation by an outside force (the hidden elite) is exactly what the men of the secret society have in mind<sup>102</sup>:

***“The art of wizardry calls for the magician to line up the materials which he wishes to transmute in such a manner that they will act like contagious bacteria. Each cell must exert an influence on the next so that as a whole the individual cells will result in a totally new product. If magic is to be used to create the new world order, the individual cells – 6 billion human brains – must be bought together as one”<sup>103</sup>.***

Through this process the thought form of ***the oneness of life*** is being created. The process of planarization – men has given up there free will, and have been robbed of discernment they have to conform to the universalist theme – with no will of their own. This is the idea behind the New World Order: to unify and uniform every aspect of life in order to gain control over the masses. This is done in several ways by propagating lies and deceit resulting in men giving up their rightful place in the kingdom of God by replacing Jesus Christ as their Saviour with a false god propagated by these New World Order activists.

Refer to Annex A for a list of Biblical End Time prophecies in comparison the New World Order agenda.

The attack on the mind does not only come through deception and indoctrination. Technologies of the contemporary times have enable the World elite to gain control over the minds of mankind in other, more disturbing ways.

The next section will discuss these technologies.

---

<sup>102</sup> Marrs Texe (2004) Dark Majesty The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of A Thousand Points of Light. Texas, USA: RiverCrest Publishing, p. 238.

<sup>103</sup> Ibid. p. 241.

## 7. THE ATTACK ON THE MIND THROUGH TECHNOLOGIES

Current technologies enable the world elite to manipulate the mind and the emotions of a human being **at a distance**. These technologies have transcended the generalized psychological states into directly stimulating the physiological parts of the brain<sup>104</sup>!

These technologies transcend the normal means of controlling ones' mind and through them, one can actually made to believe that one is "hearing from God" as with these technologies, specific visual and auditable messages can be beamed toward a person.

The New Age Movement has invested a great deal of money into **holographic technologies** that are able to project holographic images<sup>105</sup>.

Holography is<sup>106</sup>:

***"a technique which enables three-dimensional images to be made. It involves the use of a laser, interference, diffraction, light intensity recording and suitable illumination of the recording.***

***The image changes as the position and orientation of the viewing system changes in exactly the same way as if the object were still present, thus making the image appear three-dimensional.***"

---

<sup>104</sup> Farrel Josheph P (2011) Genes, Giants, Monsters and Men, The surviving elites of the cosmic war and their hidden agenda. USA: Farrel House. p. 68.

<sup>105</sup> Cumbey Constance. The Hidden Dangers of The Rainbow. The New Age Movement and Our coming Age of Barbarism. South Africa: Bet-El Publishers. p.78

<sup>106</sup> Holography. (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Holography>).

The following figure shows a holographic projection of the man on the right. Notice how “real” the image appears although it is only a holographic projection:



**Figure 1.** A holographic image.

This technology is combined with advanced audio technology and could be used to physiologically stimulate the brain into someone now “seeing an image” and “hearing specific things”<sup>107</sup>.

In this way, when directed at a person they might perceive this as an apparition of some sort and they may believe that they are receiving special instructions and revelations from “God Himself”.

According to David Spangler, in a meeting in Southfield Michigan on February 1, 1982, laser beam projectors have been installed for their use on the top of the Cathedral of St John the Divine (Episcopal) in New York City<sup>108</sup>. Lightning experts say that these devices may be used to beam onto a satellite and when the beamed rays return through the ionosphere.

---

<sup>107</sup> Farrel Josheph P (2011) *Genes, Giants, Monsters and Men*, The surviving elites of the cosmic war and their hidden agenda. USA: Farrel House. p. 68.

<sup>108</sup> Cumbey Constance. *The Hidden Dangers of The Rainbow. The New Age Movement and Our coming Age of Barbarism*. South Africa: Bet-El Publishers. p.78.

The light rays would be bent in such a way that it would appear that actual flames are coming down from the heavens and that images can be projected of such a magnitude that it would be visible to one third of the earth at any given time<sup>109</sup>. The sound technology available is of such that it would be able to project sound waves to “make the image speak” in the language of all the areas beamed to.

By using this technology one can easily be deceived into thinking that it is the Second Coming of Jesus Christ, which is exactly what the New Agers are planning. According to the Word of God:

***“And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed.”***

***Revelation 13:13-15***

This could be an end time possibility as seen by the New Agers, but more importantly these images could be used on the “everyday man” to give them messages or instructions which they will perceive as “coming from God” or the “Wise ones” that the New Agers advocate.

This could easily deceive one into doing what these “apparitions” prescribe or perform actions that they propose one to execute.

Moreover, technologies that transmit waves at a certain frequency could be used to physically stimulate the brain to secrete certain endocrine hormones as was seen in the previous chapter.

---

<sup>109</sup> Ibid. Cumbeys Constance. The Hidden Dangers of The Rainbow. The New Age Movement and Our coming Age of Barbarism. South Africa: Bet-El Publishers. p.78.

On October 2, Dr Olivier Lowery was the recipient of U.S Patent #5,159,703 to his invention called *Silent Subliminal Presentation System*<sup>110</sup>:

**“A silent communications system in which non-aural carriers, in the very low or very high audio – frequency range of the adjacent ultrasonic frequency spectrum, are amplitude- or frequently – modulated with the desired intelligence and propagated acoustically or vibrationally for inducement into the brain, typically through the use of loud speakers, earphones, piezoelectric transducers. The modulate carriers may be transmitted directly in real time or may be conveniently recorded and stored on mechanical, magnetic or optical media for delayed or repeated transmission to the listener.”**

From this passage it can be deducted that this system can be used to send subliminal messages (“modulated with the desired intelligence”) to anyone (“listeners”) through radiowaves (“for amplitude and frequency modulations”, AM and FM radio)<sup>111</sup>. This desired intelligence messages could, according to Ronson, induce the following emotional states<sup>112</sup>:

- Positive emotions: contentment, duty, faith, friendship, hope, innocence, joy, love, pride, respect, self-love and worship
- Negative emotions: anger, anguish, contempt, despair, dread, embarrassment, envy, fear, frustration, grief, guilt, hate, indifference, indignation, jealousy, pity, rage etc.

These types of mind manipulation technologies could therefore be used to induce and influence certain states of mind within the individual. The exact mechanism is “not known” but what has been proven is that it could be used to implant subliminal messages into the minds of those who are receiving the beamed message.

---

<sup>110</sup> Farrel Josheph P (2011) *Genes, Giants, Monsters and Men*, The surviving elites of the cosmic war and their hidden agenda. USA: Farrel House. p. 69.

<sup>111</sup> Ibid. p. 70.

<sup>112</sup> Ibid.



Several mind manipulation techniques are available to the governing elite as a result of the efforts of the CIA in their mind controlling research during the whole of the 20<sup>th</sup> century: hypnosis, drugs, the creation and manipulation of “cults”, extrasensory perception (ESP), sensory deprivation and conditioning and then other such as the use of microwaves, brain implants, psychosurgery and the combination of all of them<sup>113</sup>.

Experimental projects were running for the following<sup>114</sup>:

***“the erasure of memory, hypnotic resistance to torture, truth serums, post-hypnotic suggestion, rapid induction of hypnosis, electronic stimulation of the brain, non-ionizing radiation, microwave induction of intracerebral “voices” and others.”***

By reading through this list one can see that the intention of these technologies can only be to gain control over the human mind by using extreme measures. The following sections will explore some of these possibilities.

## **7.1 Electromagnetic fields, Implants and combinational approaches**

The earliest forms of mind manipulation came about in the form of direct implants into the brain<sup>115</sup>:

***“...[The] implants strongly suggests a technological lineage which can be traced to a device known as a “stimoceiver” invented in the late fifties/early sixties by a neuroscientist Jose Delgado. This stimoceiver is a miniature depth electrode which can receive and transmit electronic signals over FM radiowaves.***

---

<sup>113</sup> Farrel Joseph P (2011) *Genes, Giants, Monsters and Men*, The surviving elites of the cosmic war and their hidden agenda. USA: Farrel House, p. 77.

<sup>114</sup> Ibid.

<sup>115</sup> Ibid. p. 78.

***By stimulating a correctly positioned stimoeiver, an outside operator can wield a surprizing degree of control over the subject's responses. The most famous example of this stimoeiver in action occurred in a Madrid Bull ring. Delgado "wired" the bull before stepping into the ring, entirely unprotected. Furious for gore, the bull charged toward the doctor – the stopped, just before reaching him. The technician – turned – toreador had halted the animal by simply pushing a button on a black box, held in the hand."***

Delgado pushed his research and by 1973 he reported<sup>116</sup>:

***"Radio stimulation of different points in the amygdala and hippocampus...produced a variety of effects, including pleasant sensations, elation, deep, thoughtful concentration, odd feelings, super relaxation, coloured visions, and other responses."***

Note that these technologies were available in 1973 – by then the brain could already be manipulated by electromagnetic targeting of the regions of the brain<sup>117</sup>. With the amount of research and millions of dollars later the following was reported: "microwaves can induce metabolic changes, alter brain functions, and disrupt behaviour patterns<sup>118</sup>". In a project called *Pandora* it was discovered that "pulsated microwaves can create leaks in the blood/brain barrier, induce heart seizures, and create behavioural disorganization<sup>119</sup>."

Additionally, microwaves could be used to promote insomnia, fatigue, irritability, memory loss and hallucinations<sup>120</sup>.

---

<sup>116</sup> Farrel Josheph P (2011) *Genes, Giants, Monsters and Men*, The surviving elites of the cosmic war and their hidden agenda. USA: Farrel House, p. 77.

<sup>117</sup> Ibid.

<sup>118</sup> Ibid. p. 79.

<sup>119</sup> Ibid.

<sup>120</sup> Ibid.

Also, Dr W Ross Adey of the University of Southern California found that behaviour and emotional states can be altered without electrodes by placing the subject in an electromagnetic field<sup>121</sup>. One can see the extent to which these technologies are able to control the physiological functions of the body by only transmitting waves of energy.

It is not hard to imagine the implications of the above research. But most importantly to notice is that it can be done and that the agents of the New Age movement will use it to gain and maintain control over the masses in order to establish and rule their One World Order.

Even more astonishing, is the advancement of Delgado's technology<sup>122</sup>:

***“Trance may be remotely induced – but can it be directed? Yes. Recall the intracerebral voices...of Delgado. The same effect can be produced by the “wave”. Frey demonstrated in the early 1960’s that microwaves could produce booming, hissing, buzzing, and other intra-cerebral static (this phenomenon is now called the “Frey effect”); in 1973, Dr Joseph Sharp of the Walter Reed Amy Institute of research, expanded on Frey’s work in an excitement where the subject – in this case, sharp himself – “heard” and understood spoken words, delivered via a pulsed-microwave analog of the speakers’ sound vibrations.***

***Dr Robert Becker comments that “such a device has obvious applications in covert operations design to “drive a target crazy with voices” or deliver undetectable instructions to a programmed assassin”. In other words, we now have, at the push of a button, the technology either to inflict an electronic gaslight – or to create a true Manchurian candidate. Indeed the former capability could effectively disguise the latter.***

---

<sup>121</sup> Farrel Josheph P (2011) Genes, Giants, Monsters and Men, The surviving elites of the cosmic war and their hidden agenda. USA: Farrel House. p. 79.

<sup>122</sup> Ibid. p. 79-80.

***Who will listen to the victims when electronically induced hallucinations they recount exactly parallel the classical signals of paranoid schizophrenia and or temporal lobe epilepsy.”***

In other words, this technology enables whoever is “pushing the button” to allow for voices to be heard ***inside the head*** of whoever is targeted with its waves.

Combined with hypnosis it yields, according to research done by J.F Schapitz who combined radio frequencies with hypnosis, that after the words of the hypnotist was conveyed to the brain by these radiowaves ***into the unconscious mind*** would then initiate and action as given by the hypnotist.

Sadly the results of this study were never released to the public. This is cause for concern as a combination of these technologies would imply that not only can the mind be penetrated with “thoughts” not coming from oneself or from God, but also that actions to be executed could be implanted in the subconscious mind.

Similarly some DARPA projects involves projecting messages into the minds of victims making them believe that they are hearing from “God”.

*Wired* magazine reported<sup>123</sup>:

***“It has been long known that microwaves at certain frequencies can produce an auditory effect that sounds like it’s coming from within someone’s head.”***

---

<sup>123</sup> Horn, Tom and Horn Nita (2010) Forbidden gates How Genetics, Robotics, Artificial intelligence, synthetic biology, nanotechnology, and human enhancement herald - The dawn of techno-dimensional spiritual warfare. Place of Publication: Crane, Missouri, p. 232.

The Long Range Acoustic Device (LRAD) is a sonic projector that sends directed sound waves at a person that was used by the U.S. army<sup>124</sup>:

***“It appears that some of the troops in Iraq are using “spoken” LRAD to mess with enemy fighters. Islamic terrorists tend to be superstitious and, of course, very religious. LRAD can put “the word of God” into their heads. If God, in the form of a voice that only you can hear, tells you to surrender, or run away, what are you gonna do?”***

Jesus Christ says that My sheep know My voice (John 10:27) and that His children will not listen to the voice of a stranger. Through technology it has thus become possible [has been possible] to read and influence the minds and thoughts of individuals thereby manipulating their free will<sup>125</sup>.

In a similar vein, the EDOM (Electronic Dissolution of Memory) project has managed to accomplish the “blockage of synaptic transmission in certain areas of the brain” that results “stroke like symptoms” in that one does not have **any memory** of what happened<sup>126</sup>. This can be achieved by electromagnetic “jamming” of the signals of the neural pathways that result in the “erasure of memory from consciousness in certain areas of the brain<sup>127</sup>”.

This has a myriad of implications in itself. One can be influenced into doing something and then have no memory of it afterwards. This is the perfect way to control the masses for ones’ own purposes. Human slaves, doing exactly what they want without any memory of doing it!

---

<sup>124</sup> Horn, Tom and Horn Nita (2010) Forbidden gates How Genetics, Robotics, Artificial intelligence, synthetic biology, nanotechnology, and human enhancement herald - The dawn of techno-dimensional spiritual warfare. Place of Publication: Crane, Missouri, p. 232.

<sup>125</sup> Ibid. p. 233.

<sup>126</sup> Ibid. p. 81.

<sup>127</sup> Ibid.

This section summarizes the technological means in which one can be mind controlled that will be used by the New Age Movement in order to indoctrinate, to gain control and to cause to execute actions of **their choice and whim**. Mind control for the governing elite goes way beyond the old traditional way of indoctrination, the need complete control with man having **no free will**. One of the most effective ways of achieving this is through physically manipulating the brain to induce “natural” chemical substances in order to control mood, and as behaviour. What a perfect tool!

What is humankind to do? God specifically instructs in His Word not to fear. God provides protection of His children even in the modern days of technological warfare upon the mind. God provides protection to His children through the promises in His Word (Psalm 91).

Also, by asking for His wise council He provides wisdom into all matters:

***“If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him.”***

***James 1:5***

God gives mankind one of the most wonderful gifts when one follows Him with ones’ whole heart: **discernment**. He tells mankind what is to be trusted and what not – he instructs mankind on how to live the same way that He warns mankind against the onslaught of the enemy. Discernment is one of the gifts of the Spirit (1 Corinthians 12:10) and those living by it follows God’s wise instructions and thereby saves himself from all that the enemy has to offer.

If God **commands** obedience and He says not to fear (Isaiah 41:10, Philippians 4:6-7, Psalm 56:3, 2 Timothy 1:7, Matthew 6:25-34, Deuteronomy 31:6, 1 Peter 5:6-7, Psalm 34:4, 1 Peter 5:7, 1 John 4:18, Isaiah 35:4, Joshua 1:9, John 14:27, Matthew 6:34, Proverbs 12:25, Psalm 23:4, Luke 12:22-26, Psalm 27:1, Romans 8:31-39, Psalm 27:1-14),

He means that He will be the Protector of whoever finds shelter in His mighty wings:

***“He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty. I will say of the LORD, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust. Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence. He shall cover thee with his feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust: his truth shall be thy shield and buckler. Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day; Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday. A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee. Only with thine eyes shalt thou behold and see the reward of the wicked. Because thou hast made the LORD, which is my refuge, even the most High, thy habitation; There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling. For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone. Thou shalt tread upon the lion and adder: the young lion and the dragon shalt thou trample under feet. Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. He shall call upon me, and I will answer him: I will be with him in trouble; I will deliver him, and honour him. With long life will I satisfy him, and shew him my salvation.”***

***Psalms 91***

Therefore there is no need to be placed under the control of fear instilled by the enemy. God says that His children are to sit at His mighty Throne while He make the enemy a footstool at ones feet:

***“And David himself saith in the book of Psalms, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, Till I make thine enemies thy footstool.”***

***Luke 20:42-43***

The Bible says at the Second Coming of [the True] Christ, Jesus Christ will consume and destroy the enemy and the Anti-Christ with His very breath:

***“Let no one deceive you by any means; for that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the man of sin is revealed, the son of perdition, who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshiped, so that he sits as God in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God. Do you not remember that when I was still with you I told you these things?***

***And now you know what is restraining, that he may be revealed in his own time. For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way. And then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming. The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, <sup>and</sup> with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie, that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness.”***

***2 Thessalonians 2:3-12***

There is no need to fear the enemy of God – as God Himself protects His children from his snares. Fear is from the enemy. Satan can only have entrance into ones' life through planting strongholds (lies and deceptions) that leads one to stray from God. The next section will examine the strongholds in ones' mind as a form of “mind control” that gives access to demons into ones' life and provide a solution to dealing with these strongholds in order to protect the mind against the onslaught of the enemy.

## **8. STRONGHOLDS IN THE MIND OF THE BELIEVER**

The Bible states that mankind has been given a ***sound mind***:

***“For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.”***

***2 Timothy 1:7***

One of the definitions of sound in the Merriam Webster's dictionary is<sup>128</sup>: ***“showing good judgment or sense”***. The mind is like a computer in that it has been “programmed” in a certain way: it possess over certain kinds of thinking patterns that are ingrained in its functioning<sup>129</sup>.

---

<sup>128</sup> (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/sound>)

<sup>129</sup> Sandford John L, Sandford Lauren R (1991) The renewal of the mind. USA: Victory House Publishers. p. 17.



There habitual thinking patterns are never left unless it is forced off track and replaced with a new thinking pattern<sup>130</sup>. Anyone who has ever tried to establish a new habit or rid themselves of any old bad habits will have experienced the inertia of the mind when used to a certain way of thinking and doing. One place this phenomena is particularly seen is in the field of psychology where countless hours of counseling resulting in a counselee gaining victory over a certain area of their life merely returns to their old habitual ways of doing and falls back into the same addiction or wrong behavior they started out in<sup>131</sup>. Their minds need to be renewed according the mind of Christ in them and the Word of God. These patterns need to be replaced with new ways of thinking thereby replacing old habitual ways of thinking. Habitual ways of thinking is where most of the **strongholds in the mind** are mostly situated.

Living in the End Times before the return of Jesus Christ to the earth will prove to be one of the most violent and lawless times that the world has ever seen and the Bible says that if God did not shorten this time, no man would have survived:

***“And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.”***

***Matthew 24:22***

The only way that Satan could “get his hands” on the children of God is by planting lies in their heads that becomes **strongholds in their live**. A stronghold is a spiritual fortress<sup>132</sup> wherein Satan and his legions hide and are protected and from where they can “operate” and influence the life of the individual. These “fortresses” exists in the **mind** in the **thought patterns and ideas** that govern individuals, churches, communities and nations<sup>133</sup> and indicates a “well protected” fortified dwelling in which the enemy dwells.

---

<sup>130</sup> Sandford John L, Sandford Lauren R (1991) The renewal of the mind. USA: Victory House Publishers. p. 17.

<sup>131</sup> Ibid. p.18.

<sup>132</sup> Franipane Francis (1994) The Three Battlegrounds: The Mind, the Church & the Heavenly places. USA: New Wine Press, p. 27.

<sup>133</sup> Ibid.

Strongholds are many times established through habitual patterns of thinking. In order for one to be victorious these strongholds needs to be pulled down:

***“For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;”***

***2 Corinthians 10:3-5***

The Bible says that the Lord is the ***stronghold*** of the believer:

***“The LORD is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer; my God, my strength, in whom I will trust; my buckler, and the horn of my salvation, and my high tower.”***

***Psalms 18:2***

This means that the “safe place” of the believer is with and under the protection of God Himself like was seen in Psalms 91. In the opposite sense, a stronghold in ones’ mind is a ***“source of defence”*** for Satan where demonic or sinful activity is defended within us by our sympathetic thoughts towards evil<sup>134</sup>. The Bible says that man is ***put off his old nature*** and [he is to] ***put on the new nature*** that Christ died for him to have (Ephesians 4:22, Colossians 3:9). Man is to renew his mind to the Word of God according to Romans 12:2. Failing to do this – not living according to God’s Word – would result in strongholds being established in ones’ mind. This can be the result of wrong attitudes, wrong behaviours that sprout out of not renewing ones’ mind and protecting the “old sinful nature.”

2 Corinthians 10:5 states that:

***“Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;”***

---

<sup>134</sup> Franipane Francis (1994) *The Three Battlegrounds: The Mind, the Church & the Heavenly places*. USA: New Wine Press. p. 28.

A stronghold is any thought that exalts itself above the knowledge of God and this opens up a door or **creates legal ground for the enemy to enter into ones life**<sup>135</sup>. This is not the same as spiritual possession where demon entities possess ones' spirit the same way the Holy Spirit fills the spirit of a Christian<sup>136</sup>. All manner of spirits will attack the soul knowing they are protected by the "armour" of that person's own thoughts and doctrines (if they are not from God)<sup>137</sup>.

Strongholds created by sin and the wrong thought patterns as a result of an unrenewed mind create a defensive barrier in the mind where this barrier protects the demons from attack. Any area in the heart or mind that is not surrendered to Jesus Christ is an area vulnerable to satanic attack and it is here that strongholds need to be pulled down. If there is a stronghold in ones life one can almost expect demonic activity within that area of ones' life where demons will steal ones power and joy through their legal right to that stronghold.

To reiterate the point of stronghold in oneself as a weak place where the enemy can attack the following words were spoken by Jesus Christ:

***"...the ruler [Satan] of this world cometh, but he has nothing in Me"***

***John 14:30***

Satan had no stronghold in Jesus Christ as Jesus Christ was sinless<sup>138</sup>! There were no wrong thought patterns or attitudes to be found in Christ, He was in complete submission to His Father.

It is for this reason – that the Bible instructs to take **every thought captive** unto the obedience of Jesus Christ – this provides the way to freedom, the way to be free of stronghold through which the enemy can have access and influence into ones life.

---

<sup>135</sup> Franipane Francis (1994) *The Three Battlegrounds: The Mind, the Church & the Heavenly places*. USA: New Wine Press. p. 28.

<sup>136</sup> Ibid.

<sup>137</sup> Ibid.

<sup>138</sup> Ibid. p. 30.

Every stronghold or wrong thought needs to be repented of and needs to be replaced with the **truth of the Word of God** in order to be free.

Strongholds in the mind can come from various places: the world (through indoctrinations of the culture, from our experiences, from wrong doctrines. Next two strongholds will be briefly discussed to illustrate the point of strongholds in ones' mind.

## **8.1 EXAMPLES OF STRONGHOLDS IN THE MIND**

### **8.1.1 The stronghold of fear**

Fear is not only a stronghold for the devil and his entourage to enter and influence ones' life; it is also a demonic spirit that needs to be cast out. The spirit of fear causes one to cringe in fear and step back from God's Perfect will and plan for ones' life. God says do not fear and that His perfect love casts out fear:

***“There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.”***

***1 John 4:18***

Fear is always rooted in some kind of death. Fear has to do with “self-preservation” in that one fears the death of something – the death of a loved one, the death of ones' reputation or possessions etc. Fear is not from God.

Jesus Christ said in order to follow Him one must lay down ones' life (and everything in it) in order to gain life:

***“Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it.”***

***Matthew 16:24-25***

Jesus Christ laid down His life for His followers thereby showing His love for them. Thus, self-preservation is a tool of death<sup>139</sup>: and fear gets its root in death. Fear builds on the thread of some kind of death and self-preservation is rooted upon fear that is rooted upon death. By laying down ones' life for Christ and accepting His love fear is eradicated. By giving in to fear one is giving in to death which is not what Jesus Christ had in mind for His children:

***"The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly."***

***John 10:10***

### **8.1.2 The stronghold of cold love**

**"Because of lawlessness is increased, most people's love will grow cold."**

**Matthew 24:12**

God's Word says that we are to ***love our neighbour and our enemies*** and that God's children would be known for their love in the End times:

***"And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord: And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment."***

***Mark 12:29-30***

***"But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;"***

***Matthew 5:44***

***"By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another."***

***John 13:35***

---

<sup>139</sup> Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz. The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. Chapter 9.

## 9. CONCLUSION

***“However Christians must realize that God’s timetable take precedence over the New Ager’s timetable. Clearly the times are in God’s hands. Nothing can happen, the whole New Age movement notwithstanding, unless He is ready. However if God is ready, are we ready? It is time for a real soul searching by God’s people<sup>140</sup>.”***

God is not intimidated by the schemes and evil plans of the enemy; in fact He warns His children about them and promises a victorious outcome to those who are willing to lay down their lives and to endure. God promises salvation to those who would accept Him as their Lord and Saviour, and not bow down to the idols that are offered in this world. In order to endure the coming End Times one needs to ***equip ones’ mind*** with the Word of God in order not to be deceived. God warns that even the elect will be deceived in Matthew 24:24.

Hitler perhaps serves as the best example of how controlling ***the minds of men*** could lead to destruction and murdering of innocent people. More importantly, is the techniques employed in order to achieve such a goal. Had the men and women of Germany seen through his deceptive lies and his schemes – as we are to see through the schemes of the coming New World Order – the holocaust could perhaps have been avoided.

The power of controlling the mind should not be underestimated. By controlling the mind, one controls the person’s life. The Illuminati (Satan’s agents) of course know this and have worked it into their End Time schemes in order for their own benefit. They envision a One World Organization where mankind is serving them with blind obedience and placid compliance. In order to achieve this, a myriad of strategies for gaining control of the minds of men are in place to push their evil agenda into the End Times.

---

<sup>140</sup> Cumbe Constance. The Hidden Dangers of The Rainbow. The New Age Movement and Our coming Age of Barbarism. South Africa: Bet-El Publishers. p.62

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

The Bible warns that the End Times will be so destructive to the human race that God Himself had to shorten the time otherwise the whole of the human race would be exterminated.

The New Age movement, witchcraft and Transhumanism are all vehicles in which the governing elite strive to obtain control over mankind. Their lies are sold to the human race as something to be grasped, to strive for and to cling to in order not to be “left behind”. By accepting their deceptions that man is to become god himself, one would be giving up ones rightful place in the Kingdom of God that Jesus Christ came to die for. Accepting their delusion would entail one “opening up ones’ mind” through meditation to the infestation of demons that would lead one away from God.

Another important deception of the present times is that one race is superior to another. This lie has been propagated through instilling pride into the minds of those who are willing to accept its deadly snare. God resists the prideful ones and this is the very sin that cost Satan his place in heaven. What better revenge than to manipulate the minds of mankind, who were created in love by God Himself, in order to turn prideful and sin against their Creator.

The mind seems to be the main target for employing all of the End Time deceptions and it is for this reason that God commands that the mind should be renewed according to His Word so that one can discern what the will of God is. The Word of God also instructs to guard the heart [mind] as whatever is prevalent in the mind would be present in the life an individual.

The mind is attacked in many ways of which the modern day technologies is one. The brain is target on a psychological as well as a physiological plane in order to gain control over the human being. On a psychological front, the devil and his demons are given legal right into the lives of human beings by establishing strongholds in their minds.

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

This is also a form of mind control as the influence that can be exerted through these strongholds affects one's life and free will. One is no longer "free" from bondage as there is a demonic control established in ones' life.

All of the strategies on the attack of the mind work together in forming one goal – for Satan to gain control over the human race and to be worshipped as "god" by God's children. And it is only by the grace of God and the Spirit of God that one would be able to discern the times.

The only way for the human race to escape the snares of the enemy is through the rebirth process in which one accepts Jesus Christ as ones' Personal Lord and Saviour. When one has been reborn through the Spirit of God one receives the mind of Christ as inheritance from God. This way of living and thinking needs to be worked out into ones daily life. One is to renew ones' mind with the Word of God in order to be able to discern the false doctrines of the enemy and to identify his clever deceptions.

-----oOo-----



## APPENDIX A

### NEW AGE FULLFILLMENT AND THE END TIME PROPHECIES IN THE BIBLE

**Table 1.** An exposé of the New Age Agenda against the Revelations of God as a suggested way in which their agenda will unfold in the End Times<sup>141</sup>.

1.	NWO Agenda	The world will be united under One-world Government, led by the Maitreya the Christ.
	Biblical Prophecy	Revelation 13:15-17 clearly shows that the Beast will rule the world with absolute authority.  Only a One-World Government would have the ability to force all the peoples of the world to worship him and to take his mark, without which no one could buy or sell.
2.	NWO Agenda	The world's religions will be united into one Religion.
	Biblical Prophecy	Revelation 13:11-15 shows that the False Prophet will assist the world in worship.  He will force all men of the world to worship the image of the beast, under the pain of death. This is a One-World Religion.
3.	NWO Agenda	The world's Economy will be united into one global system.
	Biblical Prophecy	Revelation 13:16-17, foretells that the Beast, aided by the False Prophet, will force everyone on earth to take a mark, without which they cannot buy or sell.  Only a Global System, backed by political and spiritual authority, could accomplish such a feat.
4.	NWO Agenda	When Maitreya the Christ arises, he will claim to be the Christ. By using these 2 words, <b>The Christ</b> , Maitreya will be laying claim to the office of Messiah while separating it from the person, Jesus.
	Biblical Prophecy	"Every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of anti-Christ..." (1 John 4:3).  Literally, this passage means that anyone who would seek to separate Jesus the Man/God from the office of Messiah is of the spirit of Anti-Christ. This is precisely what Maitreya will be doing.
5.	NWO Agenda	The One-World Economy will control the world's food supply, and will force all nations to share equally.

---

<sup>141</sup> NWOPplansfulfillbiblicalprophecy.([www.cuttingedge.org/ce1013.html](http://www.cuttingedge.org/ce1013.html))

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

	Biblical Prophecy	Clearly, if the Global Government as foretold in Revelation 13:16-17, could force everyone to take a mark which would be utilized economically, they could also control the world's food supply.
6.	NWO Agenda	Soon after Maitreya the Christ arises, the peoples of the world will be forced to undergo a massive, "World-Wide Luciferian Initiation". Anyone who refuses to cooperate will be killed. Christians and orthodox Jews are specifically targeted.
	Biblical Prophecy	"And he shall speak great words against the Most and shall wear out the saints of God...and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time (3 1/2 years)". (Daniel 7:25). Revelation also speaks of God allowing Anti-Christ to kill many saints of God, in 6:9-11; 7:14-17; 12:11; 13:5-7; 14:12-13; and 20:4. Benjamin Creme has repeatedly threatened the <b>sword of cleavage</b> against all who refuse to cooperate with Maitreya. This brings to mind the Biblical prophecy in Revelation 20:4 that "I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the Word of God..."
7.	NWO Agenda	"Guiding Spirits" of the New World Order leaders have begun to tell them to be prepared for a simultaneous, world-wide disappearance of millions of people. These spirits ascribe this phenomenon to the fact that these people will never be able to accept Maitreya the Christ. Their continued existence on this plane will inhibit the full implementation of the New World Order; therefore, the Masters of the Illuminati has made the decision to transport them into another dimension, where their spirits will be retrained to accept the New World Order.
	Biblical Prophecy	"The Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the arch-angel, and with the trump of God...Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together...in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air..." (1 Thessalonians 4:16-7).
8.	NWO Agenda	The New Age teaches that each human has a potential godhead dwelling within them. All that is necessary for anyone to fulfill this potential is to "expand their consciousness" level properly. But, the bottom line message is: "You Are All Gods". (Alice Bailey, <b>Externalisation Of The Hierarchy</b> , p. 663). This teaching seems very alluring to someone who is not saved, for they are being promised godhood.
	Biblical Prophecy	"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times, some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils..." (1 Timothy 4:1-2).
9.	NWO Agenda	Peter LeMesurier, in his book, <b>The Armageddon Script</b> , states that tremendous miracles will surround the appearance of Maitreya. These miracles will be part technology, part deliberate staging, and part media hype by the world's mass media. Cumbey, in her book, <b>Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow</b> , quotes writings which reveal plans to utilize 3-dimensional laser beams from satellites to create the image of Maitreya to speak to all the world simultaneously, speaking to each area in their particular language.  Finally, in a seminar which I attended in Boston, August, 1991, given by the New England Director of the Theosophical Society, it was

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

		revealed that Maitreya will be able to appear as different beings to different people. He will appear as a woman to a woman, as a man to a man; he will appear as a Caucasian to a Caucasian, as Black to a Black, etc. Further, New World Order planners intend to beam down streams of fire from the heavens, using Super-Natural Psychic power, to impress people as to the divine nature of Maitreya.
	Biblical Prophecy	Revelation 13:13-14, "And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, and deceivth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles..."
10.	NWO Agenda	New Age Leaders, including Masters of the Illuminati, worship the Lord of this World, whose name is Sanat Kumara (Alice Bailey, <b><i>Externalisation of the Hierarchy</i></b> , p.676, 709, 725; and Elizabeth Van Buren, <b><i>The Secret of the Illuminati</i></b> , p. 1). Bailey goes on to explain that Sanat Kumara is the "life and the forming intelligence", presiding over the Council of Shamballa [the Heaven according to New Age doctrine]. (The <b><i>New Age Dictionary</i></b> , p. 172) Further, Sanat Kumara is "the eternal youth from the Plant Venus. Lucifer is known in occultic lore as Venus. Therefore, Sanat Kumara is merely another name for Satan or Lucifer. (Cumbey, <b><i>Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow</i></b> ).
	Biblical Prophecy	It is impossible to overlook the fact that Sanat is just a translocation of the spelling, Satan. And the Bible calls Satan the "God Of This World". (2 Cor. 4:4). Remember, the context is worship of Sanat Kumara (Satan). Revelation 13:15, "And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast...and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed." Thus, in accordance with Biblical prophecy, the Plan envisions worship of Sanat Kumara.
11.	NWO Agenda	When a person can come into full accord with the attribute of the Love of the Great One, they may "enter fully into the Spirit of God of <b>Force</b> ." (Marilyn Ferguson, <b><i>The Aquarian Gospel of Jesus the Christ</i></b> , p.16). It is very obvious that New Agers literally worship the god of Forces. This worship is littered all throughout their writings.
	Biblical Prophecy	Daniel 11:38 -- "But in his estate shall he honour the God of <b>forces</b> ..." New Age leaders and followers literally worship the <b>god of forces</b> .
12.	NWO Agenda	Jesus was not THE ONE AND ONLY Divine Son of God; rather, He was an Avatar, a world teacher who periodically has come to earth during a particular time in world history to lead mankind to a new level of consciousness. Human Jesus experienced the infilling of the Divine Christ Consciousness at the time of His baptism by John The Baptist. This Christ Consciousness then left Him at the Cross. This Divine Consciousness has never left the earth, but is just waiting for the right moment to re-appear in the human body of Maitreya the Christ. (Alice Bailey, <b><i>The Reappearance of The Christ</i></b> , p. 36-60, and Marilyn Ferguson, <b><i>The Aquarian Gospel</i></b> , p. 14).
	Biblical Prophecy	"In the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils." (1Timothy 4:1). This New Age denial of one of THE key doctrines of Christianity, taught by Jesus personally, is a doctrine of devils. Jesus refuted this lie most succinctly when He said, "I AM the Way, the Truth, and the Life. No

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

		man cometh unto the Father except through Me." (John 14:6).
13.	NWO Agenda	New Age leaders have consistently taught that the earth is seriously overpopulated. Friends of the Earth have most succinctly stated this position, stating, "an earth population of 6 billion, already overburdened by 4 billion." (Cumbey, <b>A Planned Deception: The Staging of A New Age Messiah</b> , p. 164-5). Further, they have set a time limit on this overpopulation -- 2,000 AD. New Age leaders seem to be fixated on the number two-thirds regarding population reduction. Why two-thirds? Scripture holds the understanding. I believe that, since these leaders are Satanists, we have to examine possible reasons that Satan may hate two-thirds of mankind.
	Biblical Prophecy	<p>Revelation 12:4, "And his (Satan's) tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them down to the earth..." This Scripture reveals that, when Satan fell because of his rebellion against God, one-third of the angels of Heaven decided to become a part of his rebellion. This statistic means that two-thirds of God's angels remained faithful to God. Satan must hate these angels, but he cannot overcome God's power so that he could punish these angels. I believe it possible that Satan then turned his anger toward the being which was made in God's image (man), and against God's chosen race (the Jews).</p> <p>Zechariah 13:8 (the time frame is End Times Prophecy), "And it shall come to pass, that in all the land (Israel), saith the Lord, two parts (two-thirds) therein shall be cut off and die, but the third part shall be left..." God is going to allow Satan to kill two-thirds of the Jewish population at the time of the end, during the Great Tribulation but will preserve the remnant of one-third. The parallel is found in Revelation 12, where God protects Israel in the wilderness for 42 months.</p> <p>In this regard, we cannot ignore an interesting fact of recent history. Adolf Hitler believed that he was the Anti-Christ; as such, his unfathomable hatred of the Jews reflected the burning hatred of Satan. We see, throughout the Scriptures, that Satan hates the Jews and is constantly attempting to destroy them. Hitler's goal was to totally eliminate the Jewish population.</p> <p>New Age author Nigel Pennick, states in his book, <b>Hitler's Secret Sciences</b>, in Chapter 14, entitled <b>Genocide -- An Act Of Black Magic</b> that Hitler intended, prior to WWII, that the Genocide program against the Jews would require physically conquering countries in Europe from Britain to Russia. Thus, Hitler's war effort was determined by his desire to conquer countries with Jewish populations so he could complete his world-wide program of genocide.</p> <p>This startling concept certainly explains why precious resources continued to flow to the death camps, even during the last stages of the war, when men, material, and transportation facilities were</p>

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

		<p>desperately needed by the military.</p> <p>Pennick concludes, "Genocide was the magical act whereby the history of the world would forever be transformed. The elimination of the Jews...would leave a vacuum for the ascendance of the demonic powers ...controlling the Third Reich." (p. 137)</p> <p>God allowed Hitler to kill two-thirds of the world's population of Jews, preserving the one-third remnant to establish the nation of Israel in 1948. In precisely the same manner, God will allow Anti-Christ to kill two-thirds of the Jews during the last half of the Great Tribulation, preserving the one-third remnant to establish the Israel for the return of Jesus Christ.</p> <p>I believe that the reason the New World Order seems so intent on killing two-thirds of mankind is that two-thirds of God's angels remained true to Him when Satan rebelled.</p>
14.	NWO Agenda	<p>This New World Religion will be a re-establishment of the ancient Mysteries of Initiation. (Alice Bailey, <i>The Reappearance of the Christ</i>, p. 71; Bailey, <i>The Externalisation Of The Hierarchy</i>, p. 511-515). Literally, this statement means that the Ancient Satanic Mysteries of Babylon and Egypt will be re-established as the religion of the world.</p> <p>In other words, public Satanism will be established, and will be practiced as openly as Christianity is today!</p>
	Biblical Prophecy	<p>"And at the latter end of the kingdom...a king of fierce countenance and understanding dark trickery and craftiness shall stand up. And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power..." (Daniel 8:23-24) The words "understanding dark trickery and craftiness" refers to the knowledge of the occultic arts.</p> <p>This has been the goal of members of secret societies for over 3,000 years. The Ancient Satanic Mysteries will have re-established.</p>
15.	NWO Agenda	<p>The Christian Trinity is inferior to the Solar Logos Trinity. This false Trinity is not a personal godhead but a godhead of Forces. The Bailey writings list a hierarchy of superior offices, and at the bottom, many masters. Guess who is at the bottom of the masters? <b>Jesus</b>. (Cumbey, <i>Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow</i>, p. 65-67).</p>
	Biblical Prophecy	<p>Daniel 11:36 (The context in this passage is the Anti-Christ), "And the king shall do according to his will; and he shall exalt himself, and magnify himself above every god, and shall speak marvellous (literally, astonishing) things against the God of gods..."</p> <p>This Scripture literally means that Anti-Christ shall utter the most blasphemous words possible against God. No one can say anything more blasphemous than to say that Jesus is not God, but just a lowly master, far more lowly than Sanat Kumara (Satan).</p>

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

16.	NWO Agenda	<p>Threatens violence and extermination of anyone who will not cooperate with Maitreya. Special hatred is vented toward fundamental Christians and Jews.</p> <p>David Spangler, in his book, <b><i>Revelation: The Birth Of A New Age</i></b>, states that those who will not cooperate will be sent to "another level of Earth's own consciousness where they can be contained and ministered to until such time as they can be released safely into physical embodiment again". (p. 163-4)</p> <p>Obviously, to be released back into physical embodiment again means that these people must be first separated from their present physical embodiment. The only way to accomplish this separation is to physically kill those who cannot accept Maitreya.</p>
	Biblical Prophecy	<p>"And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God..." Revelation 6:9."As I looked, this horn made war with the saints and prevailed over them." (Daniel 7:21)"And it was given unto him to make war with the saints and to overcome them..." (Revelation 13:7)</p>
17.	NWO Agenda	<p>"Since most people will not exercise [economic] restraint [from over-consumption, we must] take control of the world...to reduce the economic inductance of the world to a safe level by a process of benevolent slavery and genocide." (William Cooper, <b><i>Behold A Pale Horse</i></b>, p. 49).</p> <p>This statement is incredibly arrogant. The last time that a New Age Disciple threatened benevolent genocide was during the 1930's when Hitler was threatening to exterminate the Jews; Hitler viewed his planned extermination as benevolent for Germany, the world, and even the Jews.</p> <p>This statement is clearly a call for war against <b>all</b> people who are deemed unworthy for the New World Order.</p>
	Biblical Prophecy	<p>"And there went out another horse that was red; and power was given unto him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another; and there was given unto him a great sword." (Revelation 6:4).</p> <p>Notice that the sword given to this rider of the Red Horse of War was a great sword. How great? We get an excellent idea from Alice Bailey's, <b><i>The Externalisation Of The Hierarchy</i></b>, p. 548, "As a means in the hands of the United Nations...the atomic bomb does not belong to the... nations who...own the secrets at present...It belongs to the United Nations for use...or threatened use..." Certainly, the atomic bomb would qualify as a <b>great</b> sword.</p>
18.	NWO Agenda	<p>The New World Order will be a system of Fascism, in which the means of production and distribution will be tightly controlled and in which national currencies will have been replaced by a universal</p>

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

		monetary exchange. (Bailey, <b>The Externalisation Of The Hierarchy</b> , p. 580-1).
		Bailey further deals specifically with the change-over in economic thinking and systems on page <b>666</b> , with the revelation that this change-over will be regulated by a specific Master Ashram (demonic angel). It is no accident that economic change is specifically covered on page 666.
	Biblical Prophecy	The Bible states that the identifying number of the economic system of Anti-Christ shall be the number <b>666</b> (Revelation 13:18).
19.	NWO Agenda	"Eventually, every individual element of the [economic] structure come under computer control...with identified consumers identified via association with the use of a credit card and later a permanent tattooed body number invisible under normal ambient illumination." (Cooper, <b>Behold A Pale Horse</b> , p. 44). ]
	Biblical Prophecy	"And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name." (Revelation 13:16-17)
20.	NWO Agenda	<p>As the world proceeds to full implementation of the New World Order, the present line-up of 170+ sovereign nations must give way to a regionalization. Specifically, the world should be reorganized into 10 Super Nations:</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. North America</li> <li>2. Western Europe</li> <li>3. Japan</li> <li>4. Australia, South Africa, and the rest of the market economy of the developed world.</li> <li>5. Eastern Europe, including Russia</li> <li>6. Latin America</li> <li>7. North Africa and the Middle East</li> <li>8. Tropical Africa</li> <li>9. South and Southeast Asia</li> <li>10. China (Eduard Pestel, <b>Mankind At The Turning Point</b> Reader's Digest Press, 1974).</li> </ol> <p>Why did the leaders of the New World Order conceive of 10 nations, instead of some other number? The answer, from man's point of view, lies in a knowledge of occultism. Occultists consider the Number 10 a magical symbol, consisting of an upright man (as represented by the vertical 1) standing before the circle (as represented by the zero).</p> <p>In magical terms, the most important part of this symbol, 10, is the space between the 1 and the 0. This space represents an upright man contemplating the universe in freedom. (Frederick</p>

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

		<p>Goodman, <b>Magic Symbols</b>, p. 46-7).</p> <p>Freedom from what? Freedom from religion, as represented by the 0. Thus, man is arrogantly pictured as standing apart from organized religion.</p> <p>The number 10 is the ultimate expression of the prideful way in which the New World Order leaders conceive of themselves in relation to the world and to religion.</p>
	Biblical Prophecy	<p>Daniel 7:7, "And this I saw in the night visions, a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly...and it had ten horns..." Biblical prophecy clearly states that the kingdom of Anti-Christ will be global and will consist of 10 horns (nations). We see this picture again in Revelation 17:16 -17.</p> <p>No other single Scripture of prophecy convinces more of <b>God's Sovereignty</b> than Revelation 17:17. "For God hath put it into their hearts to fulfill His will...until the words of God shall be fulfilled." If Satan were more powerful than God, he would choose any number other than ten for the number of his final national reorganization; the very fact that New World Order leaders chose the number 10 for the global reorganization prior to the appearance of Anti-Christ shows God's absolute sovereignty.</p>
21.	NWO Agenda	<p>Writing in August, 1939, Alice Bailey stated, "In the preparatory period for the New World Order there will be a steady and regulated disarmament. It will not be optional. No nation will be permitted to produce and organise any equipment for destructive purposes or to infringe the security of any other nation." (<b>The Externalisation Of The Hierarchy</b>, p. 191). Certainly, no one could ever argue with this premise; if this plan were ever really carried out, we would have peace and safety. Indeed, peace and safety of all nations is precisely the goal of the New World Order.</p>
	Biblical Prophecy	<p>Biblical prophecy is also quite clear that this is the way in which the Anti-Christ will obtain his kingdom. Daniel 11:21b states, "he shall come in peaceably and obtain the kingdom with flatteries". Paul also states that the peoples of the world at the time of the end will believe that they have achieved <b>peace</b> and <b>safety</b>. (1 Thessalonians 5:3)</p> <p>However, Paul warns that this belief will prove to be false, because, just when they are saying this to one another, sudden and complete judgment falls upon them. This judgment falls so quickly and completely that no one escapes it awful destruction. What weapon in the history of warfare will destroy this completely and suddenly? Clearly, only nuclear warfare.</p> <p>Does Bailey shed any further light on this matter? Yes, writing in April, 1946, in <b>The Externalisation Of The Hierarchy</b>, she states, "The atomic bomb does not belong to the...nations who...own the secrets at present...It belongs to the United Nations for use (or...for threatened use when aggressive action on the part of any nation</p>



*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

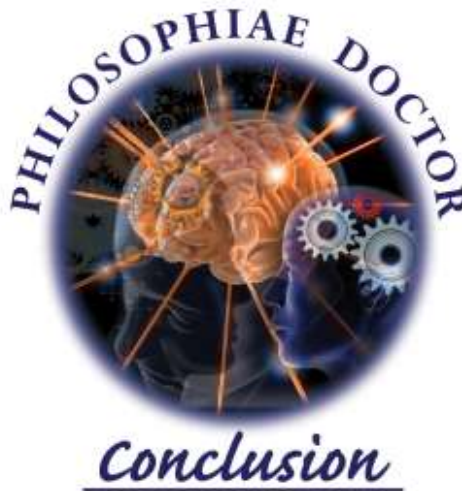
		<p>rears its ugly head." (p. 548).</p> <p>The Planners of the New World Order have plans to wage nuclear war against any nation or group of people who threaten the rule of Maitreya the Christ. Now we can understand how the next horse out of heaven after the white horse of Anti-Christ is the horse of war, carrying a <b>great</b> sword.</p>
22.	NWO Agenda	Part of the New World Order Plan is to abolish traditional religious holidays, substituting pagan festivals such as good Friday and Christmas. (Cumbey, <b>Hidden Dangers Of The Rainbow</b> , p. 83).
	Biblical Prophecy	"And he shall...think to change times and laws". (Daniel 7:25)
23.		<p>Bailey states repeatedly in <b>The Externalisation Of The Hierarchy</b> that traditional Protestant religions must change their doctrines prior to the establishment of the New World Order. They must abandon their insistence on rigid doctrinal positions.</p> <p>Mankind has a great "need for spiritual unity and to throw overboard all separative theological attitudes and dogmas in every field of thought." (p. 378). These old dogmatic doctrines must give way to the ancient Satanic Mysteries, as we have already quoted.</p>
	Biblical Prophecy	"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times, some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils." (1 Timothy 4:1).
24.	NWO Agenda	Teaches the doctrine that Maitreya will be greater than Jesus Christ. "While Jesus had had a resurrected body after the crucifixion, he had to forfeit that body because <b>he had not earned the right to keep it</b> [because] <b>Jesus was only a fourth level initiate, whereas Gautama Buddha was a sixth level initiate. However, Lord Maitreya himself was a seventh level initiate and the only one eligible for such a high level of initiation.</b> " (Cumbey, Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow, p. 96-7).
	Biblical Prophecy	<p>"And the king shall do according to his will; and he shall exalt himself, and magnify himself above every god, and shall speak marvellous things against the God of gods, and shall prosper till the indignation be accomplished..." (Daniel 11:36). ALSO:</p> <p>"Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he, as God, sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God." (2 Thessalonians 2:4).</p> <p>Clearly, the arrogant attitude on the part of Maitreya which will cause him to claim to be God is present in these incredible blasphemies against the person of Jesus Christ. Remember, also, that these planned heresies were written by people who claim that their writings have been inspired by their 'guiding spirits'.</p> <p>We have examined over 20 instances where New World Order doctrines and plans precisely mirror Biblical prophecy. According to the Laws of Probability, the odds against only 20 prophecies coming</p>

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

		<p>to pass accidentally are 1,048,000 to 1. To arrive at this figure, we did not figure into the equation any time frame or sequence of fulfillment, which would make the numbers higher. All we calculated is the chance that such a prophecy could be accidentally fulfilled.</p> <p>Clearly, this exercise builds one's confidence that we are living in the very end of the age. When you have this amount of potential Biblical prophecy fulfillment, simultaneously occurring at the same time as many other Biblical prophecies, such as the restoration of Israel, you must seriously conclude that Jesus Christ is most probably at the door.</p>
--	--	--

-----oOo-----



---

Satan, the enemy of God, has since the beginning of time been deceiving mankind into believing his lies so that they fall in his trap. He has been working on the minds of men in order to gain control over their minds and thereby their lives. Satan will, in his grand final scheme set himself up as the ruler of the world, through the anti-Christ, and will make mankind worship him as their God.

It is still the same endeavour that he embarked on before he was thrown out of heaven. He wanted to set himself up as God. This is a preposterous idea as Satan is a created being, made by God and it is therefore impossible for him to place himself above God Almighty.

It is in pursuit of this endeavour that Satan is trying to gain control of the human race upon the earth. Elaborate schemes of evil networks of elite men have been established throughout the centuries in order to help Satan achieve his age old goal: establishing a One World Order upon the earth of which he will be the ruler. Mankind will be made to comply with this new rule and those who do not will be exterminated.

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

Gaining control of the minds of men means gaining control of mankind. With this in mind Satan has deployed every imaginable scheme and plan to launch the attack on the minds of mankind in order to gain entry into their minds through which he can then rule. By Establishing a One World Order the rule of mankind will be made simple – only one system needs to be controlled and the system works the same for everyone. This is the ultimate way to monitor, manipulate, indoctrinate and keep control over a global nation.

Those who are part of his scheme have been deceived into thinking that they are the elite of all of mankind and that they are to rule the world. In actual fact they are simply chess pieces in the hands of Satan and the Fallen Angels who will use them to gain control over mankind.

Satan can gain control of the minds of mankind in several ways. First of which would be to get mankind to sin in order to get them out of the protection of a Loving God who promises protection to those who abide by His commands and walk in His ways. Satan needs to avoid this at all cost as it means losing control over mankind.

It seems an important principle to start the attack on the mind at a very young age. This is because the mind and patterns of the mind as well as behavioural patterns are not yet established in the mind when one is born. The way that God created the minds of men means their minds starts on a clean slate – a slate not left clean by Satan at any cost. Attacking mankind at this young age and instilling deceptions and strongholds into the mind ensures a lifetime of slavery in sin and bondage as these first patterns formed in the mind serves as the template for which the individual spends the rest of their life.

These patterns determine how one thinks about oneself, about fellow man and about the world around oneself. This might seem like an obvious statement but as the Word of God says, one is to guard the heart with all diligence as from it flows the issues of life. The way that one thinks about oneself determines how one will approach life and every relationship that one finds oneself in.

In this way, if Satan can manage to infiltrate the family unit that was intended by God to provide love, security and an overall sense of well-being in which one is cherished and loved, he can launch his fiery attack on the clean slate of young minds. If the correct nurturing is not received the very first messages that are written in the mind is that one is not worthy, loved or that the world is a safe place. As such, these wrong mental models sets one up for a lifetime of failure and through believing these lies one is driven into all kinds of addictions like pornography.

Pornography addiction stems from a wrong mental model established in the very early years of life. Through the mind and this wrong mental model, the sexuality of mankind is attacked. In this clever feat the enemy launches an attack on a very integral part of the composition of a human being. They cannot escape an attack on their sexuality and it influences the very way in which their bodies operate.

By believing the deceptions of the enemy and following his temptations in sexual addiction one is at risk of getting one's mind rewired: the brain is literally changed on a neurological level. Because of the brain's neuroplasticity new connections are formed in the brain every time something new is experienced and the mind works towards habituating new behaviours. By creating a delusional thought process based upon a wrong belief system or mental model Satan succeeds in getting mankind to habituate a sinful behaviour pattern like pornography.

This kind of addiction that is formed is especially dangerous to mankind as it involves the physiological processes within the brain. Through the mind-body connection watching pornography results in the secretion of some of the bodies most potent endogenous neurochemicals responsible for arousal and eventual climax. The danger behind some of these chemicals, such as Norephiphrine, ensures that whatever images are looked at during pornography viewing is seared into the mind. In this way, even when a pornography addict is not viewing pornography these images are "available" to him or her that could lead them down the bodies' natural responses to sexual stimulation.

Thus, by influencing the mind and an individual then establishing the sexual mental model for pornography, Satan succeeds in creating a chemical addiction within the body that one cannot escape of. He is able to achieve this powerful addiction within the lives of mankind by instilling lies about themselves at a very young age. These lies comprises of an attack on a person's worth and value, their needs, and their sexuality. This in turn affects their self-image and all of their relationships.

Through failing in all of their relationships as a result of these faulty mental models, these people are further and further isolated from themselves and others. Satan then offers a "cure" for their emotional pain and woundedness by teaching them to self-medicate through pornography thereby propelling them into a lifetime of sexual addiction from which escape is only possible by the help and the truth of the Word of God. Their now established sexual mental model leads them into a lifetime of sin and separates them from God. It also leads them down avenues of other, more serious, sexual perversions that could end up in them being prosecuted.

Not only is the life of an addict ruined, this also has devastating effects on families and children around the addict. In this way a whole family unit can be destroyed as a result of a single person falling into the traps of Satan's snare. The life of a person living in this way is destroyed, Satan has succeeded, he created someone addicted to his counterfeit solution for their pain. They are separated from man and God and stay under his control, all as a result of his initial attack on their mind.

The second way in which the mind is attacked with grim consequences is by attacking the gender of humankind through the mind. In the same way as with pornography addiction the mind is attacked when the child is still young so that the lies implanted in the mind affects the individual for the rest of their life.

By attacking gender through the mind Satan succeeds in creating a template for a life lived in sin. God severely judges the sin of homosexuality and one will lose ones rightful place in the kingdom of God as result thereof.

This setup for a life of sin starts in the mind and once again if Satan can gain entry through abuse of emotional, physical or sexual nature the mental model about their sexuality of the person will be perverted. This leads a person to rejecting their gender at a very young age in a means to protect themselves from what they saw or experienced.

Many times, more often than not, homosexuals are not aware where their same sex attraction comes from. Their mental model that was established during childhood lends them to have this attraction for their own sex and if they follow their same sex attraction into a lifestyle of homosexuality, Satan has once again succeeded. Their lives are destroyed and their relationship with God is severed – through this sin in their life Satan has control over them. They have created a permanent entry point for the enemy to come and goes as he pleases.

The danger of this attack on the mind is the sexual implications of following such a lifestyle. Practising homosexuality opens one up for the deepest kinds of spiritual bondages that exists, moreover, this sin results in one being exposed to the possibility of contracting some of the most deadly illnesses, like AIDS.

The creation of “same-sex” feelings within an individual comes as a result of an emotional bond that is not formed between a child and their same sex parent. It can also result because of abuse that is witnessed or being the victim of abuse at a young age. The result, as Satan knew it would be, is that this person would spend their life searching for this emotional bond to be healed and reconnected within their same sex. Their relationships are rooted on emotional dependency, not the type of freedom that God intended for it to be and as the relationship turns into a sexual nature these individuals are placed in severe bondage.

The way out of this mental bondage is for the homosexual to come to Christ, to repent of their sins and to renew their mind according to the Word of God. Failing to do this will result in a never ending cycle of same sex relationships that are guaranteed to inflict more emotional pain and physical illness.

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

Jesus Christ is the Ultimate Healer and he is also the Only One that can truly free homosexuals out of their bondage. The homosexual however, has to undergo a process of laying down the old and taking up the new as Christ died to provide.

The ultimate form of mind control comes in the form of mind control through mind programming. This type of attack on the mind lends the enemy to control the individual on every level of their being: the mind, will, emotions (soul), the body and the spirit. They are kept in bondage by employing intricate control mechanisms within the mind while fear, manipulation and blackmail plays an integral role in keeping the person in bondage.

This type of control is achieved through attacking the mind at a very young age and by wiring the mind in a specific way so that total control is gained through the mind programming. In this type of control one comes face to face with the true nature of the enemy as he subjects a child to the worst, cruellest types of trauma that could ever be imagined. By inflicting these types of trauma the mind is overwhelmed and a split is created in the mind so that the mind dissociates. Dissociation is part of the protective mechanisms that God built into the mind so that when subjected to this type of abuse that the individual is protected from it. In this way Satan again taps into the human beings makeup, only this time he uses the minds' natural defence mechanism for his own gain.

By splitting the mind and creating different personalities within the same individual, the individual is cut off from himself so that they are not always aware of all their different personalities. Now that the individual has no control the personalities are each created and programmed in a very specific way for a specific purpose and function to be used by the enemy. In this way a person comes under total control of whatever the enemy wants to do or achieve through them.

They are totally helpless in their situation and by programming the mind up to this level the mind can be set up in such a way that the body processes can be controlled.



*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

This provides a very dangerous weapon in the hand of the controller as the may activate the suicide programs that sets certain physiological processes off in the mind that results in the death of a person. Additionally, demonic entities are built into the spirit of such an individual so that demons can access and control the person.

The result: total control over the human being in his entirety. This provides the perfect mind controlled slave that can be used and commanded at ones whim. This is the type of control that Satan wants for his New World Order, compliant human beings that worship him as their ruler. The only way in which one will be able to come out of this captivity is by the working of the Holy Spirit, the Blood of Jesus and His finished work on the cross.

Another way of controlling human kind is through subliminal mind control. This type of control works by projecting subliminal messages into the minds of mankind that penetrates their subconscious mind but does not come to the conscious mind. These messages enter the mind and the technology for using this type of control has been proven, that when combined with hypnosis, it could implant a message and make the individual follow up with an action on the message. This presents the perfect mind control tool for Satan in the end times as he can now enter messages into the minds of human beings that they are even unaware of that could result in directing their actions, thoughts and behaviours.

Hitler provided the perfect template for controlling a nation during the First and Second World War. He used mind control to indoctrinate a nation to accepting his principles and doctrines about the Jews. He did this by infiltrating every area of the lives of the Germans with his “war” propaganda – he militarized everything so that they would adopt his schemes. Hitler also worked with deceptions and euphuisms in order to conveniently leave out the harsh reality of what he was really propagating. He used and instilled fear in the hearts of the nation and ruled them by it. Fear is from the enemy and the stronghold of fear needs to be removed from the mind in order for Satan to lose his grip on mankind.

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

---

The same template for indoctrinating a nation can be seen played out today though the vehicle that the governing elite are using to push their (Satan's) One World Agenda. The New Age Movement can be seen to be using the same methods and means as well as are propagating the same messages that Hitler did, that man is to attain godhood. This again set the wheels in motion for creating a superior race (the same race as a necessity by the Transhumanists, and the Illuminati). Opening the conscious to become "one" with the universe – this is seen as a necessity and something to be desired although the reality is that one will be opening oneself up for demonic infestation. The trading of good for bad theme is seen again. It is also clear from their doctrines that compliance to their one world religion will be compulsory and those who are not willing to comply will not be tolerated.

With the technology available today, through mind programming, subliminal mind control and the cooperation of the evil spiritual realm (demons and principalities) mankind can be mind controlled to the extent that it has never been done in the past. All of Satan's schemes are in place in order to establish a One World Order, the age old goal of the Illuminati, upon the earth. Deception and mind control are two very powerful weapons in the hands of the enemy with which he will succeed in deceiving mankind into accept his lies and then to control them, knowingly or unknowingly, into worshipping him as their God. The deception used by Satan will be so severe that the Bible prophesies that even the elect children of God will be deceived by it.

Satan will succeed in establishing his One World Order upon the earth and rule the earth through his prophet the Anti-Christ. All of this is prophesied in the Bible and Jesus Christ will defeat Satan and all of his hoards with the very breath of His mouth at His Second Coming.

The only way to be safe from the attacks of the enemy on the mind is by accepting Jesus Christ as ones' Personal Lord and Saviour. By this rebirth process one is moved from ones' captivity in the kingdom of darkness into the kingdom of light.

*End Time Destruction of Human Kind In Establishing A New World  
Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

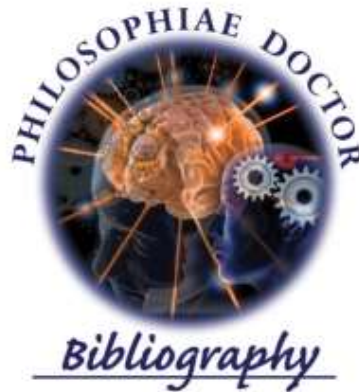
---

In this way the spirit of the human being is made alive again and is reconnected with God, their Creator. One becomes a child of God and receives the mind of Christ out of which one is to live a life of victory over the enemy.

Having the mind of Christ enables one to life with the same intentions, heart and thoughts that Jesus Christ has and as one renews ones' mind to the Word of God one will become more and more Christlike in ones' ways and thinking. This is done by working out ones' own salvation and it provides protection against the snares of the enemy and places one securely in the will and under the protection of God's principles.

The mind needs to be renewed to the truths of God's Word in order to remove the habitual sinful thinking patterns and the strongholds placed in the mind by the enemy. The Word of God is able to bring the truth into ones' life thereby destroying the strongholds in ones' mind and set one free from its lies. One is to meditate (think over) the Word of God in order for it to become established in the mind and for its principles to become a way of life. The Word of God will provide all wisdom and knowledge necessary to protect one from all the lies and deceit of the devil and in this way one can stay free from his snares and avoid captivity through his lies that he wants to establish in the mind.

-----oOo-----



## 1. BIBLIOGRAPHY

### ACADEMIC DISSERTATIONS

Malan Christina (2010) *The Perversion Of Mankind Through Sexual Brokenness and Deviation With Special Reference To Homosexuality, Destroying God's Purpose For Godly Bloodlines*. Pretoria: Radah Ministries.

Van der Walt Marilize (2012) *The Emergence of the Techno-Dimensional Era as Instrument in Human Enhancement as Part of a Secret Alien Agenda*. Pretoria: Radah Ministries.

### ACADEMIC PUBLICATIONS

Elliot, Carl (2003) Humanity 2.0 Transhumanists believe that human nature's a phase we'll outgrow, like adolescence. Someday we'll be full-fledged adult posthumans with physical and intellectual powers of which we can now only dream. But will progress really make perfect? *The Wilson Quarterly* 27 (4).

### BOOKS

Bahnsen Greg L (1978) *Homosexuality: a Biblical view*. USA: Baker Book House.

Brice, Taylor. Thanks for the memories: The truth has set me free. The memoirs of Bob Hope's and Henry Kissinger's mind-controlled slave. Used as a presidential sex toy and personal computer. USA: Brice Taylor Trust.

Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries.

Buys Amanda (2004) End Time Battle Plans: SRA/DID. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries.

Buys Amanda. The ABC of DID: Summary for pastors and leaders. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries.

Buys Amanda (2013) SRA/DID Advanced Training. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries.

Buys Amanda. DID/SRA Advanced Training: October 2013. Kanaan Ministries: South Africa.

Carlson Neil R (2004) Physiology of Behaviour. USA: Pearson.

Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers..

Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: SP Publications.

Cumbey Constance. The Hidden Dangers of The Rainbow. The New Age Movement and Our coming Age of Barbarism. South Africa: Bet-El Publishers.

Darkwolf Vos Donna (2002) Dancing under an African Moon: Paganism and Wicca in South Africa.

Franipane Francis (1994) *The Three Battlegrounds: The Mind, the Church & the Heavenly places*. USA: New Wine Press.

Hallman Janelle (2008) *The Heart of Female Same Sex Attraction: A comprehensive Counseling resource*. USA: IVP Books.

Hawkins Tom. *A New Approach to DID*. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries.

Hayford Jack (2004) *The Anatomy of Seduction. Defending your heart for God*. California, USA: Regal Books.

Hunt Dave, McMahon T.A. (1988) *The New Spirituality. A consumers guide to the exploding New Age Movement*. USA: Harvest House Publishers.

Horn, Tom and Horn Nita (2010) *Forbidden gates How Genetics, Robotics, Artificial intelligence, synthetic biology, nanotechnology, and human enhancement herald - The dawn of techno-dimensional spiritual warfare*. Place of Publication: Crane, Missouri.

Horn Thomas R (2007) *Nephilim Stargates The year 2012 and the return of the watchers*. Crane, USA: Anomalos Publishing.

Horn Thomas, Horn Nita, Stearman Gary, Hutchins Noah, Missler Chuck, Gilbert Sharon, McTernan John, Bennett Michael, Meekins Frederick, Teichrib Carl, Woodward Doug, Hamp Douglas, Putnam Cris. *Pandemonium's engine How the End of the Church Age, the rise of Transhumanism, and the Coming of the Ubermensch (Overman) Herald*

*Satan's Imminet and Final Assault on the Creation of God*. Crane MO:Defender.

Horn Thomas (2009) Apollyon Rising 2012: The Lost Symbol Found and the Final Mystery of the Great Seal Revealed. A terrifying and prophetic Cipher Hidden from the World by the U.S. government for Over 200 Years is here! USA: Defender.

Ing Richard (1996) Spiritual warfare. USA: Whitaker House..

Kastleman Mark B (2007) The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing.

Lennox John (2011) God and Stephan Hawking Whose Design is it anyway? England, London: Lion Hudson plc.

Farrel Josheph P (2011) Genes, Giants, Monsters and Men, The surviving elites of the cosmic war and their hidden agenda. USA:Farel House.

Lutzer Erwin W (2004) The Truth about same sex marriage. 6 Things you must know about what's really at stake. USA: Moody Publishers..

Marrs Texe (2004) Dark Majesty The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of A Thousand Points of Light. Texas, USA: RiverCrest Publishing.

Marrs Texe (1996) Circle of Intrigue: The Hidden inner circle of the Global Illuminati Conspiracy. Texas, USA: Living Truth Publishers.

Origins and Techniques of Monarch Mind Control. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries.

Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: Scripture Press Publications.

- Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction. USA: Harvest House Publishing.
- Quayle Stephen (2003) Genetic Armageddon, Today's technology Tomorrow's Monsters. USA: End Time Thunder Publications.
- Rebecca Brown (1986) He came to set the captives free. Chino CA: Chick Publications
- Riggs Doug (2012). Articles and Information. South Africa: Kanaan Ministries.
- Sandford John L, Sandford Lauren R (1991) The renewal of the mind. USA: Victory House Publishers p.19.
- Ruffino David, Jordan Joseph (2010) Unholy Communion: The Alien Abduction Phenomenon, Where It Originates And How It Stops. USA: Defender Publishing House.
- Sherbert Michael Gilbert (2010) Transhumanism as a religious product of the West: A comparative analysis with Christianity. A Master's Essay Submitted to the Department of Religious Studies in conformity of the requirements for the degree of Master of Arts. Ontario, Canada: Queen's University Kingston.
- Struthers WM (2009) Wired for intimacy: How pornography hijacks the male brain. Illinois: Intervarsity Press
- Sumrall Lester (1973) Demons: The Answer Book. "Resist the devil, and he will flee from you – James 4:7. PA, USA: Whitaker House.
- Thomas I.D.E (2008) The Omega Conspiracy, Satan's last assault on God's Kingdom. USA: Anamalos Publishing House.



Victor George (2000) Hitler: The Pathology of Evil. USA: Potomac Books.

Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz. The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave.

Webre Lamremont Alfred (2005) Exopolitics: Politics, Government and Law in the Universe. USA: UniverseBooks.

Zucker KJ, Bradley SJ (1995) Gender Identity Disorder and Psychosexual problems in Children and Adolescents. NY: The Guilford Press.

## **INTERNET RESOURCES**

Mental model.

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mental\\_model#History](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mental_model#History)): 12 July 2013.

Wright Forrester.

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jay\\_Wright\\_Forrester](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jay_Wright_Forrester)): 6 September 2013.

A PET (Positron emission tomography)

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Positron\\_emission\\_tomography](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Positron_emission_tomography)) : 24 July 2013.

Relevant Magazine:

(Relevant Magazine: <http://www.relevantmagazine.com/life/whole-life/features/29332-this-is-your-brain-on-porn>) : 14 August 2013.

Relevant Magazine:

(Relevant Magazine: <http://www.relevantmagazine.com/life/whole-life/features/29332-this-is-your-brain-on-porn>): 11 October 2013.

Relevant Magazine:

(Relevant Magazine: <http://www.relevantmagazine.com/life/whole-life/features/29332-this-is-your-brain-on-porn>): 14 August 2013.

Relevant Magazine:

(Relevant Magazine: <http://www.relevantmagazine.com/life/whole-life/features/29332-this-is-your-brain-on-porn>): 18 July 2013.

Relevant Magazine:

(Relevant Magazine: <http://www.relevantmagazine.com/life/whole-life/features/29332-this-is-your-brain-on-porn>) : 14 August 2013.

According to Covenant eyes:

(<http://www.covenanteyes.com/pornstats/>): 6 September 2013

Covenant eyes:

(<http://www.covenanteyes.com/pornstats/>): 20 October 2013.

Relevant Magazine:

(<http://www.relevantmagazine.com/life/whole-life/features/29332-this-is-your-brain-on-porn>): 22 September 2013.

Tech addiction: effective help for video game and computer addiction:

(<http://www.techaddiction.ca/pornography-addiction-statistics.html>): 1 October 2013.

Relevant Magazine:

(Relevant Magazine: <http://www.relevantmagazine.com/life/whole-life/features/29332-this-is-your-brain-on-porn>): 30 September 2013.

Relevant Magazine:

(Relevant Magazine: <http://www.relevantmagazine.com/life/whole-life/features/29332-this-is-your-brain-on-porn>): 30 September 2013.

Deceive:

<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/deceive>): 11 August 2013.

Gay:

(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/gay>): 8 October 2013.

Lesbian:

(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/lesbian>): 19 July 2013.

Biology and sexual orientation:

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Biology\\_and\\_sexual\\_orientation](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Biology_and_sexual_orientation)): 25 September 2013.

Genetics and homosexuality: Are people born gay? The Biological basis for Sexual orientation.

([http://www.godandscience.org/evolution/genetics\\_of\\_homosexuality.html](http://www.godandscience.org/evolution/genetics_of_homosexuality.html)): 13 October 2013.

God and Science

(<http://www.godandscience.org/>): 7 September 2013.

The Genetics of homosexuality

([http://www.godandscience.org/evolution/genetics\\_of\\_homosexuality.html](http://www.godandscience.org/evolution/genetics_of_homosexuality.html)): 18 July 2013.

Genetics of Homosexuality

([http://www.godandscience.org/evolution/genetics\\_of\\_homosexuality.html](http://www.godandscience.org/evolution/genetics_of_homosexuality.html)): 18 July 2013.

Pandora's Project: Support and resources for survivors of rape and sexual abuse.

(<http://www.pandys.org/articles/abuseandhomosexuality.html>): 15 August 2013.

International Classification of Diseases:

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/International\\_Statistical\\_Classification\\_of\\_Diseases\\_and\\_Related\\_Health\\_Problems](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/International_Statistical_Classification_of_Diseases_and_Related_Health_Problems)): 1 August 2013.

Gender Identity Disorder.

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender\\_identity\\_disorder](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender_identity_disorder)): 5 October 2013.

Gender Identity Disorder.

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender\\_identity\\_disorder](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender_identity_disorder)): 5 October 2013.

Gender Identity Disorder.

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender\\_identity\\_disorder](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender_identity_disorder)) on 5 October 2013.

Child Healing: Strengthening Families. Gender Identity Disorder and Transsexual Issues:

(<http://www.childhealing.com/articles/genderidentitydisorder.php>): 3 September 2013.

Gender Identity Disorder.

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender\\_identity\\_disorder](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gender_identity_disorder)): 3 October 2013.

Child Healing: Strengthening Families. Gender Identity Disorder and Transsexual Issues:

(<http://www.childhealing.com/articles/genderidentitydisorder.php>): 13 October 2013.

Child Healing: Strengthening Families. Gender Identity Disorder and Transsexual Issues:

(<http://www.childhealing.com/articles/genderidentitydisorder.php>): 24 September 2013.

Homosexuality.

(<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Homosexuality>): 1 October 2013.

Sound

(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/sound>): 22 July 2013.

Subliminal. The online Free dictionary

(<http://www.thefreedictionary.com/subliminal>): 11 October 2013.

Subliminal

(<http://dictionary.reference.com/browse/subliminal>): 21 October 2013.

Subliminal mind control.

(<http://www.slideshare.net/secretofmindpower/subliminal-mind-control-everything-you-need-to-know>): 10 October 2013.

Subliminal

(<https://www.vocabulary.com/dictionary/subliminal>): 14 October 2013.

Subliminal Manipulation

(<http://subliminalmanipulation.blogspot.com/>): 18 October 2013.

Subliminal Definition

(<http://www.subliminaldefinition.org/>): 6 October 2013.

Subliminal advertising and Modern Day Brainwashing.

(<http://transmissionsmedia.com/subliminal-advertising-and-modern-day-brainwashing/>): 2 July 2013.

Subliminal messages in advertising.

(<http://subliminalmanipulation.blogspot.com/2010/09/subliminal-messages-in-advertising-in.html>): 15 August 2013.

Subliminal messaging in advertisement.

(<http://subliminalmanipulation.blogspot.com/2010/09/subliminal-messages-in-advertising-in.html>): 1 August 2013.

Another Disney movie, Tangled with a subliminal message.

(<http://officeforward.com/another-disney-movie-tangled-with-subliminal-message.html>): 15 August 2013.

Walt Disney is Satanic.

(<http://www.sodahead.com/topic/watched-walt-disneys-fantasia-hear-music/?link=ibaf&q=&esrc=s>): 20 August 2013.

Sex in Politics

(<http://subliminalmanipulation.blogspot.com/2010/09/sex-in-politics-word-sex-is-frequently.html>): 8 October 2013.

Mind control.

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mind\\_control](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mind_control)): 8 October 2013.

Korean War.

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Korean\\_War](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Korean_War)): 8 October 2013.

Multiple Personality Disorder

(<http://www.merriamwebster.com/dictionary/multiple+personality+disorder?show=0&t=1382122983>): 8 October 2013.

Dissociative Identity Disorder.

(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/dissociative%20identity%20disorder>): 14 October 2013.

Dissociative Identity Disorder.

(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/personality>): 8 September 2013.  
(<http://news.softpedia.com/news/Our-Personality-Is-Fully-Developed-By-the-Age-of-7-151093.shtml>): 8 September 2013.

Trauma.

(<http://dictionary.reference.com/browse/trauma>): 8 September 2013.

Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz.

The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. Chapter 1.

([http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati\\_formula\\_mind\\_control.htm](http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm)): 3 September 2013.

Spiritual warfare: Principalities-Powers-Rulers of Darkness-wickedness:

([http://www.battleinchrist.com/principalities\\_powers\\_world\\_rulers\\_of\\_darkness\\_spiritual\\_wickedness\\_in\\_spiritual\\_warfare.htm](http://www.battleinchrist.com/principalities_powers_world_rulers_of_darkness_spiritual_wickedness_in_spiritual_warfare.htm)): 28 September 2013.

I Give You the Keys of The Kingdom:Satan's hierarchy.

(<http://www.livingwaternj.com/Teaching/Satans%20Kingdom/Lesson%203.htm>):

21 September 2013.

Spiritual warfare: Principalities-Powers-Rulers of Darkness-wickedness:

(<http://www.livingwaternj.com/Teaching/Satans%20Kingdom/Lesson%203.htm>):

30 September 2013.

Wheeler Cisco, Springmeier Fritz.

The Illuminati Formula Used To Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled  
Slave. Chapter 10

([http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati\\_formula\\_mind\\_control.htm](http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm)): 15 August 2013.

Controlling your mind September 2010.

(<http://www.spiritalive.org/newsletter.php/view=12>): 4 October 2013.

Survival of the fittest.

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Survival\\_of\\_the\\_fittest](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Survival_of_the_fittest)): 4 October 2013.

Animal magnetism

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Animal\\_magnetism](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Animal_magnetism)): 11 October 2013.

New Age.

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/New\\_Age](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/New_Age)): 11 October 2013.

Alfred Webre.

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Alfred\\_Webre](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Alfred_Webre)): 24 October 2013



Bostrom Nick (2003) The Transhumanism FAQ, A General introduction. Version 2.1.  
Oxford University. Oxford.

(<http://www.transhumanism.org/resources/FAQv21.pdf>): 16 October 2013.

Transhumanism.

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Transhumanism#Specter of coercive eugenicism.  
28Eugenics Wars argument.29](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Transhumanism#Specter_of_coercive_eugenicism.28Eugenics_Wars_argument.29)): 18 October 2013.

Holography.

(<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Holography>): 4 October 2013.

NOW Plans fulfill biblical prophecy.

( [www.cuttingedge.org/ce1013.html](http://www.cuttingedge.org/ce1013.html)): 20 October 2013.



---

## *Terms and Definitions*

### **Abuse:**

- 1: a corrupt practice or custom
- 2: improper or excessive use or treatment : MISUSE <drug *abuse*>
- 3: *obsolete* : a deceitful act : DECEPTION
- 4: language that condemns or vilifies usually unjustly, intemperately, and angrily
- 5: physical maltreatment

--oOo--

### **Cognitive:**

of, relating to, or being conscious intellectual activity (as thinking, reasoning, remembering, imagining, or learning words) <sup>1</sup>

--oOo—

---

<sup>1</sup> Cognitive (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/medical/cognitive>)

## Consciousness:

- 1a:** the quality or state of being aware especially of something within oneself
- b :** the state or fact of being conscious of an external object, state, or fact
- c :** AWARENESS; *especially* : concern for some social or political cause
- 2:** the state of being characterized by sensation, emotion, volition, and thought : MIND
- 3:** the totality of conscious states of an individual
- 4:** the normal state of conscious life <regained *consciousness*>
- 5:** the upper level of mental life of which the person is aware as contrasted with unconscious processes<sup>2</sup>

--oOo--

## Corruption:

- 1:** impairment of integrity, virtue, or moral principle : **depravity**
- 2:** Decay, decomposition
- 3:** inducement to wrong by improper or unlawful means (as bribery)
- 4:** a departure from the original or from what is pure or correct<sup>3</sup>

--oOo--

## Demon:

- 1a :** an evil spirit
- b :** a source or agent of evil, harm, distress, or ruin
- 2:** *usually daemon* : an attendant power or spirit : **Genius**
- 3:** *usually daemon* : a supernatural being of Greek mythology intermediate between gods and men

---

<sup>2</sup> Consciousness (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/consciousness>)

<sup>3</sup> Corruption (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/corruption>)

- 4:** one that has exceptional enthusiasm, drive, or effectiveness<a *demon* for work><sup>4</sup>

--oOo--

### **Dissociative Identity Disorder:**

- 1:** A disorder that is characterized by the presence of two or more distinct and complex identities or personality states each of which becomes dominant and controls behaviour from time to time to the exclusion of the other and results from disruption in the integrated functions of consciousness, memory, and identity – called also multiple personality, dissociative

--oOo--

### **Dualism:**

- 1:** a theory that considers reality to consist of two irreducible elements or modes
- 2:** the quality or state of being dual or of having a dual nature
- 3a:** a doctrine that the universe is under the dominion of two opposing principles one of which is good and the other evil
- b:** a view of human beings as constituted of two irreducible elements (as matter and spirit)<sup>5</sup>

--oOo--

### **Deception:**

- 1a :** the act of deceiving
- 1b :** the fact or condition of being deceived

---

<sup>4</sup> Demon (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/demon>)

<sup>5</sup> Dualism (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/dualism>)

2: something that deceives : TRICK <a clever *deception*><sup>6</sup>

--oOo--

### Intimidation:

(also called cowing) is intentional behaviour that "would cause a person of ordinary sensibilities" fear of injury or harm. It's not necessary to prove that the behaviour was so violent as to cause terror or that the victim was actually frightened.<sup>7</sup>

--oOo--

### Fear:

1: an unpleasant often strong emotion caused by anticipation or awareness of danger and accompanied by increased autonomic activity

2: an instance of fear<sup>8</sup>

--oOo--

### Homosexual:

1: of, relating to, or characterized by a tendency to direct sexual desire toward individuals of one's own sex—compare Heterosexual

2: of, relating to, or involving sexual intercourse between individuals of the same sex—compare Heterosexual<sup>9</sup>

--oOo--

---

<sup>6</sup> Deception (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/deception>)

<sup>7</sup> Intimidation. (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Intimidation>)

<sup>8</sup> Fear (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/medical/fear>)

<sup>9</sup> Homosexual (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/medical/homosexual>)

## Insane:

- 1:** mentally disordered : exhibiting insanity
- 2:** used by, typical of, or intended for insane persons <an *insane* asylum><sup>10</sup>

--oOo--

## Manipulation:

- 1:** to treat or operate with or as if with the hands or by mechanical means especially in a skillful manner
- 2a:** to manage or utilize skillfully
- b:** to control or play upon by artful, unfair, or insidious means especially to one's own advantage
- 3:** to change by artful or unfair means so as to serve one's purpose : Doctor<sup>11</sup>

--oOo--

## Mentalist:

one that professes or is held to be able to perceive another's thought without normal means of communication<sup>12</sup>

--oOo--

## Mind:

- 1:** Recollection, Memory <keep that in *mind*> <time out of *mind*>
- 2a:** the element or complex of elements in an individual that feels, perceives, thinks, wills, and especially reasons
- b:** the conscious mental events and capabilities in an organism

---

<sup>10</sup> Insane (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/insane>)

<sup>11</sup> Manipulation (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/manipulation>)

<sup>12</sup> Mentalist (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/mind+reader>)

- c:** the organized conscious and unconscious adaptive mental activity of an organism
- 3:** **Intention, Desire** <I changed my *mind*>
- 4:** the normal or healthy condition of the mental faculties
- 5:** **Opinion, view**
- 6:** Disposition, Mood
- 7a:** a person or group embodying mental qualities <the public*mind*>
- b:** intellectual ability
- 8** *capitalized Christian Science* : GOD 1b
- 9:** a conscious substratum or factor in the universe
- 10:** **Attention** <pay him no *mind*><sup>13</sup>

--oOo--

### Mind control:

Also known as brainwashing, coercive persuasion, mind abuse, menticide, thought control, or thought reform. Refers to a process in which a group or individual "systematically uses unethically manipulative methods to persuade others to conform to the wishes of the manipulator(s), often to the detriment of the person being manipulated". The term has been applied to any tactic, psychological or otherwise, which can be seen as subverting an individual's sense of control over their own thinking, behaviour, emotions or decision making<sup>14</sup>.

--oOo--

---

<sup>13</sup> Mind. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/mind>)

<sup>14</sup> Mind control ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mind\\_control](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mind_control))

### **Mind/body problem (connection):**

The mind–body problem in philosophy examines the relationship between mind and matter, and in particular the relationship between consciousness and the brain<sup>15</sup>.

--oOo—

### **Mental disorder/illness:**

a mental or bodily condition marked primarily by sufficient disorganization of personality, mind, and emotions to seriously impair the normal psychological functioning of the individual—called also mental illness<sup>16</sup>

--oOo—

### **Multiple personality disorder:**

Dissociative identity disorder (DID), also known as multiple personality disorder (MPD).

MPD is a mental disorder characterized by at least two distinct and relatively enduring identities or dissociated personality states that alternately control a person's behaviour, and is accompanied by memory impairment for important information not explained by ordinary forgetfulness<sup>17</sup>.

--oOo—

---

<sup>15</sup> Mind-body connection ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mind-body\\_connection](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mind-body_connection))

<sup>16</sup> Mental disorder (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/medical/mental+disorder?show=0&t=1374645398>)

<sup>17</sup> Multiple Personality Disorder ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Multiple\\_personality\\_disorder](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Multiple_personality_disorder))



## Occult:

The occult (from the Latin word occultus "clandestine, hidden, secret") is "knowledge of the hidden"<sup>18</sup>

--oOo—

## Paranoia:

- 1: a psychosis characterized by systematized delusions of persecution or grandeur usually without hallucinations
- 2: a tendency on the part of an individual or group toward excessive or irrational suspiciousness and distrustfulness of others<sup>19</sup>

--oOo--

## Personality:

- 1: The set of emotional qualities, ways of behaving etc. that makes a person different from other people
- 2: Attractive qualities (such as energy, friendliness, and humor) that make a person interesting or pleasant to be with
- 3: Attractive qualities that makes something unusual or interesting

--oOo--

## Psychiatry:

The medical specialty devoted to the study, diagnosis, treatment, and prevention of mental disorders. These include various affective, behavioural, cognitive and perceptual abnormalities.<sup>20</sup>

--oOo—

---

<sup>18</sup> Occult. (<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Occult>)

<sup>19</sup> Paranoia (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/medical/paranoia>)

<sup>20</sup> Psychiatry. (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Psychiatry>)

## Psychology:

is an academic and applied discipline that involves the scientific study of mental functions and behaviours<sup>21</sup>.

--oOo--

## Psychosis:

- 1: (from the Greek ψυχή "psyche", for mind/soul, and -ωσις "-osis", for abnormal condition or derangement) refers to an abnormal condition of the mind, and is a generic psychiatric term for a mental state often described as involving a "loss of contact with reality".<sup>22</sup>
- 2: a serious mental disorder (as schizophrenia) characterized by defective or lost contact with reality often with hallucinations or delusions<sup>23</sup>

--oOo--

## Reason:

Is the capacity for consciously making sense of things, applying logic, for establishing and verifying facts, and changing or justifying practices, institutions, and beliefs based on new or existing information<sup>24</sup>.

--oOo--

---

<sup>21</sup> Psychology (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Psychology>)

<sup>22</sup> Psychosis. (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pyscosis>)

<sup>23</sup> Psychosis (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/medical/psychosis>)

<sup>24</sup> Reason. (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Reason>)

## Ritual:

Any act or practice regularly repeated in a set precise manner for relief of anxiety <obsessive-compulsive *rituals*><sup>25</sup>

--oOo--

## Satanic ritual abuse:

(SRA, sometimes known as ritual abuse, ritualistic abuse, organised abuse, sadistic ritual abuse and other variants) was a moral panic that originated in the United States in the 1980s, spreading throughout the country and eventually to many parts of the world, before subsiding in the late 1990s. Allegations of SRA involved reports of physical and sexual abuse of individuals in the context of occult or Satanic rituals. At its most extreme definition, SRA involved a worldwide conspiracy involving the wealthy and powerful of the world elite in which children were abducted or bred for sacrifices, pornography and prostitution.<sup>26</sup>

--oOo--

## Subliminal:

- 1: inadequate to produce a sensation or a perception
- 2: existing or functioning below the threshold of consciousness <the *subliminal* mind> <*subliminal* advertising><sup>27</sup>

--oOo--

---

<sup>25</sup> Ritual (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/medical/ritual>)

<sup>26</sup> Satanic Ritual Abuse. ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Satanic\\_ritual\\_abuse](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Satanic_ritual_abuse))

<sup>27</sup> Subliminal. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/medical/subliminal>)

## Transhumanism:

- 1: The intellectual and cultural movement that affirms the possibility And desirability of fundamentally improving the human condition through applied reason, especially by developing and making widely available technologies to eliminate aging and to greatly enhance human intellectual, physical, and psychological capacities.
- 2: The study of the ramifications, promises, and potential dangers of technologies that will enable us to overcome fundamental human limitations, and the related study of the ethical matters involved in developing and using such technologies.”

--oOo--

## Witchcraft:

Witchcraft (also called witchery or spellcraft) is the use of magical faculties, most commonly for religious, divinatory or medicinal purposes. This may take many forms depending on cultural context.<sup>28</sup>

--oOo---

---

<sup>28</sup> Witchcraft. (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Witchcraft>)

## *Abbreviations*

<b>ACUTE</b>	Evangelical Alliance's Commission of Unity and Truth Among Evangelists
<b>AIDS</b>	Acquired Immunodeficiency Syndrome
<b>DID</b>	Dissociative Identity Disorder
<b>GID</b>	Gender Identity Disorder
<b>HIV</b>	Human Immunodeficiency Virus
<b>ISH</b>	Inner Self Helper
<b>ICD</b>	International Classification of Diseases
<b>LARD</b>	Long Range Acoustic Device
<b>MPD</b>	Multiple Personality Disorder
<b>NWO</b>	New World Order
<b>NA</b>	New Age
<b>PET</b>	Positron Emission Tomography
<b>PH</b>	Post Human
<b>SRA</b>	Satanic Ritual Abuse
<b>TH</b>	Transhumanism
<b>WTA</b>	World Transhumanism Association




---

*Chapter 1 A mental model of sexual addiction pertaining to pornography  
in explaining the behaviours of a pornography addict*

FIGURE 1: THE FUNNEL EXPERIENCE IN A HEALTHY MARRIAGE .....	32
FIGURE 2: THE PORNOGRAPHIC FUNNEL.....	33
FIGURE 3: STATISTICS ON INTERNET PORNOGRAPHY.....	56
FIGURE 4: THE ADDICTIVE SYSTEM .....	71
FIGURE 5: THE COADDICTIVE SYSTEM.....	84
FIGURE 6: NAVAJO TAPESTRY.....	103

*Chapter 3 Mind programming and Mind Control as weapon against  
the Human Race in gaining control*

FIGURE 1: A PRESENTATION GIVEN BY BILL GATES ON ENERGY .....	204
FIGURE 2: A SUBLIMINAL MESSAGE IN A BURGER KING ADVERTISEMENT.....	205
FIGURE 3: A SUBLIMINAL MESSAGE HIDDEN IN THE WELL-KNOWN FACEBOOK HOMEPAGE SITE.....	206
FIGURE 4: A SUBLIMINAL MESSAGE HIDDEN IN THE WALT DISNEY FILM, TANGLED.....	206

---

FIGURE 5: SUBLIMINAL MESSAGES IN DISNEY MOVIES, LIKE THE LION KING.....	207
FIGURE 6: A SUBLIMINAL PORTRAYAL OF PRESIDENT BARAK OBAMA AS A “SAINT” .....	208
FIGURE 7: AN ILLUSTRATION OF THE CORE OF THE SOUL, NESHAMAH.....	234
FIGURE 8: ANCHORS (BLACK ARROWS) WITHIN THE SPIRIT OF THE HUMAN BEING RESPONSIBLE FOR CONTROLLING THE MIND PROGRAMS IN THE SOUL (MIND, WILL AND EMOTIONS) OF THE INDIVIDUAL.....	237
FIGURE 9: THE FAMOUS SINGER RIHANNA WEARING A “MINDS CONTROL” T-SHIRT.....	245

*Chapter 4 End Time Destruction of Human Kind in  
Establishing a New World Order by controlling the masses through  
mind control*

FIGURE 1: A HOLOGRAPHIC IMAGE.....	325
------------------------------------	-----

## *List of Tables*

*Chapter 1: A mental model of sexual addiction pertaining to pornography  
in explaining the behaviours of a pornography addict*

TABLE 1: CARNES DIVIDES SEXUAL ADDICTIONS INTO ONE OF THREE CATEGORIES .....	74
TABLE 2: CORE BELIEFS OF DIFFERENT MENTAL MODELS .....	98

## *List of Appendix*

*Chapter 1: A mental model of sexual addiction pertaining to pornography in explaining the behaviours of a pornography addict*

APPENDIX A: CORE BELIEF SYSTEM OF THE ADDICT .....	104
APPENDIX B: THE COADDICTS' WORLD.....	108

*Chapter 4 End Time Destruction of Human Kind in Establishing a New World Order by controlling the masses through mind control*

APPENDIX A: NEW AGE FULLFILLMENT AND THE END TIME PROPHECIES IN THE BIBLE.....	338
--	-----